

TEACH YOURSELF BOOKS

SERBO-CROAT

VERA JAVAREK
MIROSLAVA SUDJIĆ



THE TEACH YOURSELF BOOKS

SERBO-CROAT

**Some other
Teach Yourself Books**

Serbo-Croatian Phrase Book
Afrikaans
Arabic
Bengali
Cantonese
Comparative Linguistics
Chinese
Czech
Danish
Dutch
English Grammar
English for Swahili-Speaking People
Esperanto
Finnish
French
Everyday French
French Grammar
German
German Grammar
Good English
Greek
Modern Greek
Hebrew
Icelandic
Indonesian
Irish
Italian
Japanese
Latin
Latvian
Learn A Language
Malay
Maltese
Norwegian
Modern Persian
Polish
Portuguese
Russian
Samoan
Spanish
Everyday Spanish
Swahili
Swedish
Turkish
Urdu
Yoruba

TEACH YOURSELF
SERBO-CROAT

VERA JAVAREK, B.A., Ph.D.(London)
*Lecturer in Serbo-Croatian Language and Literature
in the University of London*

and

MIROSLAVA SUDJIĆ
*Graduate of the University of Belgrade,
Lecturer in Serbo-Croat at the Holborn College of Law, Languages and
Commerce, London*



TEACH YOURSELF BOOKS

ST PAUL'S HOUSE WARWICK LANE
LONDON EC4

First printed 1963
Corrected impression 1967
This impression 1969

Copyright © 1963
The English Universities Press Ltd

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopy, recording, or any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

SBN 340 05817 X

Printed in Great Britain for The English Universities Press Limited
by Gilmour and Dean, Ltd., Hamilton, Lanarkshire.

TO



OUR HUSBANDS AND SONS

PREFACE

Serbo-Croat is considered one of the easiest of European languages for English-speaking people to pronounce, and as it is pronounced exactly as it is written, what is often one of the major difficulties in teaching oneself a foreign language does not exist here. Nevertheless it is obvious that however conscientiously you study and observe the explanation of the pronunciation given in Lesson I, the sooner you can hear the language spoken by a native (if only on the wireless or on a gramophone record) the better.

Although you will, of course, try to memorise each new word as you come across it, you are strongly advised to compile your own English-Serbo-Croatian vocabulary from the beginning, writing it as far as possible in alphabetical order, and including in it not only words mentioned in the Lessons but those given in the individual Vocabularies in each Lesson. In this way you will supply yourself with a source of easy reference for all the words you will need for translation into Serbo-Croat as the lessons proceed. The general Serbo-Croatian-English Vocabulary will be found at the end of the book. The Key on page 156 gives you the translation of the English sentences and passages at the end of each Lesson, but not of the shorter exercises occurring in the Lessons.

For additional practice in translation into Serbo-Croat we recommend you to write English translations of the Serbo-Croatian sentences and passages, to translate these back into Serbo-Croat a little later, and to check your translation from the original version.

Rules for punctuation have not been given, as you will learn these from observation of the Serbo-Croatian passages in the Lessons and Key.

We have not devoted a Lesson to an account of the uses of the prepositions ; the commonest of these are introduced gradually, and experience has shown us that students find most helpful a complete list for reference such as we have given in the Appendix.

We understand the difficulties of students teaching themselves a language in which the grammatical structure and vocabulary are so different from those of their own language. Our advice to you is to study at least a little every day, consolidating, as you go, what you have already learned. In any case, however rapid or however slow your progress, of one thing you may be confident : that as a student of Serbo-Croat you will receive the warmest welcome and every help when you visit Yugoslavia.

VERA JAVAREK
MIROSLAVA SUDJIĆ

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Kind permission was received from the Director of the Department of Literature of the Yugoslav Authors' Agency, Belgrade, for the inclusion of the extracts from works of Serbian and Croatian writers. We should like to record our thanks to him, as well as to Yugoslav authorities in Belgrade and Zagreb for helpful interest in this Grammar, and particularly to our colleague in London, Dr. Oton Grozdić, who gave his advice most generously whenever another opinion was of value.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION :	
The Yugoslav Languages, Dialects and Alphabets . . .	xi
 LESSON	
I Alphabets, Pronunciation, and Stress Accent . . .	I
II The Present Tense	10
III The Uses of the Cases. Masculine Nouns . . .	13
IV Neuter Nouns. ' I can ' and ' I must ' . . .	20
V The Present Tense of the Verb ' to be '. Questions .	23
VI Feminine Nouns. Some Notes on Consonant Changes and ' Moveable a '	28
VII The Compound Past Tense. Notes on the Formation of the Present Tense	33
VIII Adjectives	41
IX The Aspects of the Verb	50
X The Aspects of the Verb (continued). Further Notes on Adjectives	55
XI The Future Tense	62
XII Personal Pronouns. Word Order	69
XIII The Reflexive Pronoun. Reflexive Verbs	77
XIV Cardinal Numerals	84
XV Ordinal Numerals. The Date. The Day of the Week. The Time of Day	89
XVI The Comparative and Superlative Forms of Adjectives	95
XVII Interrogative Pronouns and Adjectives. Relative Pro- nouns. Expressions of Time	102
XVIII Consonant Changes and other Notes on the Forms of Words	108
XIX The Conditional. Letter Writing	116

	PAGE
XX The Imperative and Prohibitions. Further Notes on Noun Declensions	123
XXI Passive Participles and Verbal Nouns	128
XXII Other Tenses. The Verbs <i>trebati</i> and <i>morati</i> . Some Impersonal Expressions	133
XXIII More Notes on Nouns. Collective Numerals	139
XXIV Gerundives. <i>Kogod, ko god</i> , etc.	145
XXV A Summary of the Uses of the Cases	150
 APPENDIX	
1 Key to Translations into Serbo-Croat	156
2 Verb Lists	170
3 List of Feminine Nouns with Consonantal Endings	181
4 List of Prepositions. Uses of the Preposition <i>na</i>	182
5 General Vocabulary	187

INTRODUCTION

THE YUGOSLAV LANGUAGES, DIALECTS AND ALPHABETS ¹

The language which is usually called in English 'Serbo-Croat' ² is spoken over the greater part of Yugoslavia. It differs considerably from the language of Slovenia, in the north-west, and to a less extent from that of Macedonia, in the south-east.

Serbo-Croat has three dialects, named after the word for 'what' in each of them. Two of these, the *kaj* and *ča* dialects, are spoken over relatively small areas: the *kaj*-dialect (which somewhat resembles Slovene) in a region to the west of Zagreb, and the *ča*-dialect in parts of northern Dalmatia and the islands. Elsewhere the *što*-dialect is spoken, and is nearly always used in literature. You will therefore be studying the *što*-dialect of Serbo-Croat.

This *što*-dialect as spoken by the Serbs of Serbia and the north-eastern regions of Yugoslavia is slightly different from that spoken by the Croats and inhabitants of other western regions. The subdivision of the *što*-dialect spoken by the former is known as the *e*-dialect, and that spoken by the latter as the *ije*-dialect. The principal difference between these two dialects is in certain words containing the vowel *e* in the *e*-dialect. Some words containing a long *e* in the *e*-dialect have *ije* in the *ije*-dialect, e.g. *reka*, *rijeka* (river); and some words containing a short *e* in the *e*-dialect have *je* in the

¹ You are recommended to read this Introduction again after you have studied the alphabets and pronunciation.

² We generally use the form 'Serbo-Croatian' as an adjective: e.g. 'A Serbo-Croatian Grammar'; but 'Teach yourself Serbo-Croat'.

ije-dialect, e.g. *pesma*, *pjesma* (song, poem); but sometimes the vowel *e* is the same in both dialects, e.g. *selo* (village). There are also a few regional variations in vocabulary.

Some reading passages in the *ije*-dialect of Serbo-Croat are given in this book, and differences in the forms of words are noted in the General Vocabulary thus: r(ij)eka; p(j)esma; but otherwise the simpler *e*-dialect as spoken in Belgrade is used. The student who becomes familiar with this dialect will have no difficulty at all in understanding the *ije*-dialect, and may, from the beginning, use either a Serbian-English dictionary (*srpsko-engleski rečnik*) or a Croatian-English dictionary (*hrvatsko-engleski rječnik*). In Yugoslavia the language is called either *srpskohrvatski* or *hrvatskosrpski*; in the English form of the name 'Serbo' is placed first for the sake of euphony.

The Cyrillic alphabet was adopted by Yugoslavs belonging to the Orthodox church; and the Latin alphabet—supplemented by 'diacritic signs' placed over certain letters—by the Roman Catholics. Hence the Serbs of Belgrade use the *e*-dialect and the Cyrillic alphabet, and the Croats of Zagreb the *ije*-dialect and the Latin alphabet; but the Latin alphabet is known by all educated Yugoslavs, and books are frequently printed in this alphabet in Belgrade. The Latin alphabet is used in this book, and you are recommended to use it while studying the language, as you will find it much easier to learn new words in a familiar alphabet.

LESSON I

ALPHABETS, PRONUNCIATION, AND STRESS ACCENT

Latin	Cyrillic ¹	Cyrillic (written)	Pronunciation ² (nearest English equivalents)
A a	А а	<i>А а</i>	as in <i>rather</i> . Examples: <i>a</i> —and, but; <i>Za- greb</i> .
B b	Б б	<i>Б б</i>	as English <i>b</i> . Examples: <i>baba</i> —old woman, grandmother; <i>bomba</i> —bomb.
C c	Ц ц	<i>Ц ц</i>	ts, as in <i>cats</i> , <i>flotsam</i> , <i>tse-tse</i> fly. Examples: <i>baca</i> —(he) throws; <i>car</i> —tsar.
Č č	Ч ч	<i>Ч ч</i>	ch, as in <i>chop</i> . Examples: <i>bacač</i> —thrower; <i>ček</i> —cheque.
Ć ć	Ћ ћ	<i>Ћ ћ</i>	somewhat similar to č, though nearer to the t in <i>future</i> . Example: <i>ćaća</i> —daddy.
D d	Д д	<i>Д д</i>	similar to English <i>d</i> . Examples: <i>da</i> —yes; <i>daća</i> —tax.
Dž dž	Џ џ	<i>Џ џ</i>	j, as in <i>just</i> . Example: <i>džak</i> —sack.

¹ Students whose dictionaries are printed in the Cyrillic alphabet will notice that the order of the letters in this alphabet is somewhat different.

² Some words borrowed from other languages, e.g. *ček* (cheque), whose pronunciation is obvious, have been introduced as examples before the pronunciation of all their letters has been explained.

Latin	Cyrillic	Cyrillic (written)	Pronunciation (nearest English equivalents)
Đ đ ¹	Ђ ђ	Ђ ђ	somewhat similar to dž, though nearer to the d in <i>verdure</i> . Examples : <i>đak</i> —schoolboy, student ; <i>čađ</i> —soot.
E e	Е е	Е е	as <i>ea</i> in <i>bear</i> . Examples : <i>deca</i> —children ; <i>ćebe</i> (two syllables)—blanket.
F f	Ф ф	Ф ф	as English f. Example : <i>februar</i> —February.
G g	Г г	Г г	g as in <i>got</i> . Examples : <i>gde</i> —where ; <i>čega</i> —of what.
H h	Х х	Х х	h, as in <i>hot</i> ; as the ch in <i>loch</i> before another consonant. Example : <i>dah</i> —breath.
I i	И и	И и	i as in <i>machine</i> . Examples : <i>i</i> —and ; <i>bič</i> —whip ; <i>ići</i> —to go ; <i>fino</i> —fine.
J j	Ј ј	Ј ј	consonantal y, as in <i>young</i> . Examples : <i>ja</i> —I ; <i>Rijeka</i> ; <i>daje</i> (two syllables)—(he) gives.
K k	К к	К к	as English k. Examples : <i>kad</i> —when ; <i>baka</i> —granny.
L l	Л л	Л л	as English l. Examples : <i>ali</i> —but ; <i>leći</i> —to lie down ; <i>hlad</i> —coolness, shade.
Lj lj	Љ љ	Љ љ	as in <i>colliery</i> . Examples : <i>biljka</i> —plant ; <i>dalje</i> (two syllables)—farther.

¹ Also sometimes written Dj, dj ; or Gj, gj.

Latin	Cyrillic	Cyrillic (written)	Pronunciation (nearest English equivalents)
M m	М м	<i>М м</i>	as English m. Examples : <i>milja</i> —mile ; <i>imam</i> — (I) have.
N n	Н н	<i>Н н</i>	as English n. Examples : <i>nađem</i> —(I) find ; <i>ka-</i> <i>men</i> —stone ; <i>ne</i> —no, not.
Nj nj	Њ њ	<i>Њ њ</i>	as in <i>pinion</i> , <i>canyon</i> . Examples : <i>fenjer</i> —lantern ; <i>nji-</i> <i>ma</i> —to them ; <i>lenj</i> —lazy.
O o	О о	<i>О о</i>	nearer to the aw in <i>shawl</i> than to the o in <i>bone</i> . Examples : <i>o</i> —about, concern- ing ; <i>deo</i> (two syllables)—a part ; <i>molim</i> —please ; <i>kao</i> (two syllables)—as.
P p	П п	<i>П п</i>	as English p. Examples : <i>poći</i> —to start off ; <i>panj</i> —tree-stump ; <i>polje</i> (two syllables)—field.
R r	Р р	<i>Р р</i>	trilled r, as a consonant or vowel. Examples : <i>reč</i> —word ; <i>brada</i> — chin, beard ; <i>par</i> —pair ; <i>crn</i> — black ; <i>brdo</i> (two syllables)— hill, mountain.
S s	С с	<i>С с</i>	always as in <i>soft</i> , <i>loss</i> . Examples : <i>kosa</i> —hair ; <i>nos</i> — nose ; <i>sada</i> —now.
Š š	Ш ш	<i>Ш ш</i>	sh, as in <i>hush</i> . Examples : <i>loš</i> —bad ; <i>škola</i> — school.

Latin	Cyrillic	Cyrillic (written)	Pronunciation (nearest English equivalents)
T t	Т т	Т т	similar to English t. Examples : <i>tako</i> —so, thus ; <i>me- tar</i> —metre ; <i>rt</i> —promontory.
U u	У у	У у	as oo in <i>boot</i> . Examples : <i>u</i> —in, into ; <i>kuća</i> — house ; <i>jug</i> —south.
V v	В в	В в	as English v. Examples : <i>hvala</i> —thank you ; <i>krov</i> —roof ; <i>vrt</i> —garden.
Z z	З з	З з	as English z. Examples : <i>prozor</i> —window ; <i>zelen</i> —green ; <i>voz</i> —train.
Ž ž	Ж ж	Ж ж	as the s in <i>treasure</i> . Examples : <i>žed</i> —thirst ; <i>koža</i> — skin ; <i>nož</i> —knife.

The combination *aj* gives the diphthong *i* as in English 'mine', so that *maj* (the month of May) sounds similar to English 'my'; *ej* gives *ay* as in English 'rayon', so that *kej* (quay) is pronounced 'kay'; *oj* gives *oy* as in English 'toy', so that *boj* (battle) sounds similar to English 'boy'. Vowels in combinations such as *ou* in *pouka* (instruction), *au* in *pauk* (spider), *ae* in *trinaest* (thirteen), *ao* in *imao* (had) are pronounced separately: po-u-ka; pa-uk; trina-est; ima-o. Exceptions occur in a few words borrowed from foreign languages, e.g. *kauč*, which means, and is pronounced like, English 'couch'. A few words contain what appear to be double vowels, e.g. *poorati* (to plough down); these vowels are pronounced separately, as in English 'co-operate'. As in English, vowels may be long or short, but whereas in English there is a distinct difference in the pronunciation of long and short vowels (compare the sound of 'a' in 'father' and

‘fat’), in Serbo-Croat the difference is only one of length; vowel length is therefore not indicated in this Grammar, but your pronunciation will of course benefit if you listen for it when you hear the language spoken; you will notice, for example, that the *a* in *dan* (day) is a little longer than in *san* (sleep).

The spelling of Serbo-Croat is phonetic: almost every word is written exactly as it is pronounced. Every letter is pronounced. With regard to the position of the stress accent only one rule can be given: the last syllable of a word is never stressed. In words of two syllables the first syllable will therefore always be stressed. In this book the vowel of the stressed syllable in words of more than two syllables is printed in heavy type, thus: Jugoslavija, *srpskohrvatski*.

The so-called ‘musical intonation’ of spoken Serbo-Croat, which is more noticeable in some regions than in others, is a study for the specialist rather than for the average student; but a note on this will help the student to model his intonation on that of a Yugoslav when he hears the language spoken, and to make the fullest use of any books (e.g. certain readers) in which this intonation is indicated. The voice either rises or falls on stressed syllables and on most words of one syllable. This rising or falling does not depend on the sense of phrases or sentences. (Contrast the English: ‘Stealing? Yes, stealing!’, where the voice may rise or fall on the syllable ‘steal’ according to whether the word ‘stealing’ occurs in question or answer.)

In text-books in which this intonation is shown, the signs used to indicate the rising or falling of the voice on long vowels are: *ˊ* (*vīno*—wine) and *˘* (*râdnica*—workwoman) respectively, and on short vowels *ˋ* (*gospòdin*—Mr., gentleman) and *ˋˋ* (*gòspoda*—Mrs., lady). Thus besides indicating intonation these signs show vowel length and the position of the stress accent. Naturally the rising or falling of the voice

is much more easily distinguished when the vowel is long than when it is short. Listen for the long falling â in the phrase 'Döbar dân !'—'Good day !'.

PRONUNCIATION PRACTICE

One	jedan	један
Two	dva	два
Three	tri	три
Four	četiri	четири
Five	pet	пет (longer 'e' than in English 'pet')
Six	šest	шест
Seven	sedam	седам
Eight	osam	осам
Nine	devet	девет
Ten	deset	десет
Eleven	jedanaest	једанаест (four syllables— je-da-na-est)
Twelve	dvanaest	дванаест (three syllables)
Thirteen	trinaest	тринаест
Fourteen	četрнаest	четрнаест (four syllables)
Fifteen	petnaest	петнаест
Sixteen	šesnaest	шеснаест
Seventeen	sedamnaest	седамнаест
Eighteen	osamnaest	осамнаест
Nineteen	devetnaest	деветнаест
Twenty	dvadeset	двадесет
First	prvi	први
Second	drugi	други
Third	treći	трећи
Fourth	četvrti	четврти
Fifth	peti	пети
Sixth	šesti	шести

Seventh	sedmi	седми
Eighth	osmi	осми
Ninth	deveti	девети
Tenth	deseti	десети
Monday	ponedeljak	понедељак
Tuesday	utorak	уторак
Wednesday	sreda	среда
Thursday	četvrtak	четвртак
Friday	petak	петак
Saturday	subota	субота
Sunday	nedelja	недеља
January	januar	јануар
February	februar	фебруар
March	mart	март
April	april	април (<i>N.B.—Not pronounced as in English !</i>)
May	maj	мај (<i>See page 4.</i>)
June	jun	јун
July	jul	јул
August	avgust	август
September	septembar	септембар
October	oktobar	октобар
November	novembar	новембар
December	decembar	децембар (<i>N.B.—pronounced 'detsembar'</i>)

(Note that the days of the week and the months are not given initial capital letters in Serbo-Croat.)

Good morning	Dobro jutro	Добро јутро (At the end of a word <i>o</i> sounds similar to the vowel in English 'got'.)
Good day	Dobar dan	Добар дан
Good evening	Dobro veče	Добро вече

Good night	Laku noć	Лаку ноћ
Please	Molim	МОЛИМ (You may say 'Molim?' if you want someone to repeat something.)
Thank you	Hvala	Хвала
Thank you very much	Hvala lepo	Хвала лепо
Good ; all right	Dobro	Добро
Excuse me	Izvinite me	ИЗВИНИТЕ МЕ
Goodbye	Zbogom	ЗБОГОМ
Au revoir	Do viđenja	До виђења
Good journey	Srećan put	Срећан пут
Yugoslavia	Jugoslavija	Југославија
Slovenia	Slovenija	Словенија
Croatia	Hrvatska	Хрватска
Serbia	Srbija	Србија
Macedonia	Makedonija	Македонија
Bosnia	Bosna	Босна
Hercegovina	Hercegovina	Херцеговина
Dalmatia	Dalmacija	Далмација
Montenegro	Crna Gora	Црна Гора
The Sanjak	Sandžak	Санџак
Ljubljana	Ljubljana	Љубљана
Zagreb	Zagreb	Загреб
Belgrade	Beograd	Београд
Skoplje	Skoplje	Скопје (Скопље)
	(formerly Skoplje)	
Sarajevo	Sarajevo	Сарајево
Mostar	Mostar	Мостар
Dubrovnik	Dubrovnik	Дубровник
Cetinje	Cetinje	Цетиње
Novi Pazar	Novi Pazar	Нови Пазар

Great Britain	Velika Britanija	Велика Британија
England	Engleska	Енглеска
Scotland	Škotska	Шкотска
Northern Ireland	Severna Irska	Северна Ирска
Wales	Vels ¹	Велс

Learn by heart the following verse from 'Primorski pejzaž'². ('Приморски пејзаж' — 'Seaside Landscape'), by Gvido Tartalja (Гвидо Тартаља, b. 1899).

Mala kuća kamena	Мала кућа камена
sa tri mala prozora :	A-little house, stone-built, са три мала прозора :
zeleni im ³ kapci, ⁴	with three little windows : зелени им капци,
i krov sav od plamena,	green their shutters, и кров сав од пламена
a na krovu vrapci.	and the-roof all of flame, а на крову врапци.
	and on the-roof sparrows.

¹ Most foreign geographical names and names of people are spelled phonetically, as nearly as possible, in Serbo-Croat. Thus 'Shakespeare' is 'Šekspir' ('Шекспир'), and Bernard Shaw 'Bernard Šo' ('Бернард Шо'). Double consonants very rarely occur, so 'Addison' becomes 'Adison' ('Адисон'). A more accurate Serbo-Croatian phonetic spelling of 'Wales' would be 'Velz', but the letter 's' occurring at the end of names taken from English is usually written 's' (Cyrillic 'с'), e.g. Dickens : 'Dikens' ('Дикенс').

² *Pejzaž* is borrowed from French 'paysage'. Notice that initial capital letters are not used as freely in titles as they are in English.

³ The actual meaning of *im* is 'to them'. You will find that this construction need not be imitated, as the possessive adjectives corresponding to English 'my' etc. are generally used.

⁴ *N.B.* pronounced 'kaptsi'.

LESSON II

THE PRESENT TENSE

The present tenses of all except three verbs ¹ have one of the following three types of endings :

	1	2	3
	Singular		
1st person	-am	-im	-em
2nd „	-aš	-iš	-eš
3rd „	-a	-i	-e
	Plural		
1st „	-amo	-imo	-emo
2nd „	-ate	-ite	-ete
3rd „	-aju	-e	-u ²

Examples :

imam (I) have	govorim (I) speak	idem (I) go
imaš (thou) hast	govoriš	ideš
ima (he, she, it) has	govori	ide
imamo (we) have	govorimo	idemo
imate (you) have	govorite	idete
imaju (they) have	govore	idu

There is only one present tense ; *govorim* may also mean ' I am speaking ' and *idem* ' I am going '.

The Serbo-Croatian personal pronouns have been omitted here because they are seldom used as the subjects of verbs unless they are necessary for the sake of clarity or emphasis.

The 2nd person singular (*imaš*—thou hast) is used only in addressing a person with whom one is familiar, or a child.

¹ These three exceptions are : *jesam*—I am (see p. 23) ; *hoću*—I will (see p. 62) ; *moгу*—I can (see p. 21).

² A few verbs of this type have 3rd person plural ending *-aju*, e.g. *umeju*—they know how ; *razumeju*—they understand.

Otherwise the 2nd person plural is used for both singular and plural.

The negative particle *ne* precedes the verb to form the negative : *ne razumem*—I don't understand. But *imam* has a negative form : *nemam, nemaš*, etc.—I haven't, thou hast not, etc.¹

VOCABULARY

(Words occurring in the lessons will not usually be repeated in these Vocabularies, but can be found in the General Vocabulary at the end of the book.)

čítam—I read, am reading
gledam—I watch, look at
jedem—I eat
pevam—I sing
pijem—I drink
pišem—I write
puším—I smoke

putujem—I travel
radim—I work
sedim—I sit
spavam—I sleep
stanujem—I live, reside
učim—I study
ustajem—I get up

ali—but
brzo—quickly
često—often
dobro—well, good
glasno—loudly
i—and
kad *or* kada—when
kod kuće—at home
leti—in summer
obično—usually
on—he

oni—they (masc.)
ovde—here
pažljivo—carefully
polako—slowly
ponekad—sometimes
rano—early
stalno—constantly
suviše—too, too much
uvek—always
veselo—merrily
zimi—in winter

¹ In the present tense of only two other verbs does the negative particle combine with the verb : *nisam*—I am not ; *neću*—I will not. (See Lessons V and XI.)

Exercise : Complete the present tenses of the verbs given in the Vocabulary.¹

Read aloud and translate : 1. Pevaju veselo kad putuju. 2. Sedim ovde. 3. Ne spavamo dobro. 4. On stalno jede i pije. 5. Ne čitate, ne pišete i ne učite. 6. Gledaju pažljivo. 7. Stanujemo ovde. 8. Ne pijem. 9. Uvek pevaju glasno. 10. Sede kod kuće i čitaju. 11. Ne putujem zimi, ali često putujem leti. 12. Čitam brzo ali pažljivo. 13. Obično radim kod kuće. 14. On ponekad govori suviše brzo. 15. Zimi ne ustajemo rano. 16. Stalno radi. 17. Puše kad rade. 18. Pišem pažljivo. 19. Sedim kod kuće i čitam. 20. Oni čitaju suviše brzo.

Translate : 1. We're travelling quickly. 2. I read when I'm eating. 3. We're studying slowly and carefully. 4. He sings loudly and merrily when he's working. 5. You don't live here. 6. He doesn't understand when I speak. 7. They work here but they sleep at home. 8. We're speaking slowly. 9. You read well. 10. We sing when we work, but we don't sing too loudly. 11. He's always speaking. 12. In the winter we sit at home. 13. In the summer they usually travel. 14. I don't smoke. 15. He often gets up early. 16. They usually sit here. 17. You're speaking too quickly. 18. You don't write. 19. He works and ² they watch. 20. I'm getting up.

¹ Rules will be given later (p. 37) to help you to decide which type of present tense ending a verb will take, and a list of useful verbs with their present tense endings will be found in the Appendix.

² Use *a*, which has also, to some extent, the meaning 'but'.

LESSON III

THE USES OF THE CASES. MASCULINE NOUNS

In the extract from a poem given on p. 9 *mala kuća* is translated as 'a little house', and *krov* as 'the roof'. There is, in fact, no definite or indefinite article¹ in Serbo-Croat. From the context it will usually be clear whether 'a' or 'the' should be supplied when translating into English. Here *krov* might equally well have been translated 'a roof'.

This extract also provides an example of a noun in two forms: *krov*, *krovu*. Serbo-Croatian nouns are declined; that is, their endings vary according to the function of the noun in the sentence. *Krov* and *krovu* (the form used in the poem after the preposition *na*—on) represent two 'cases' in the declension of *krov*. There are seven cases in Serbo-Croat, and the declensions vary according to the gender and type of the noun; but in each declension the endings of nouns may be the same in two or more cases, and case-endings are often the same in nouns of different genders.

There are three genders: masculine, feminine, and neuter. Most nouns ending in a consonant in the singular of the first case—the nominative (the form which is given in dictionaries and vocabularies)—are masculine: *lekar*—doctor; *grad*—city; most nouns ending in *-o* and nearly all ending in *-e* are neuter: *selo*—village; *dete*—child. Nouns denoting male and female living creatures are usually masculine and feminine respectively, as one would expect; but nouns denoting young creatures are often neuter.

Genders of nouns will be given in the Vocabularies only when they do not conform to these general rules.

¹ The numeral *jedan* (one) is sometimes used where the indefinite article would be used in English.

THE PRINCIPAL USES OF THE CASES

The Nominative is the case of the subject of the verb : *krov gori*—*the roof is burning* ; *kuća je mala*—*the house is small*. Note that the nominative case is used after the verb ‘to be’, as well as before it, in sentences such as ‘*učitelj je Englez*’—‘*the teacher is an Englishman*’.

The Genitive case is generally used, without a preposition, when in English a noun would be preceded by the preposition ‘of’ : *putovanja Jugoslovena*—*the travels of a Yugoslav* ; *krovovi kuća*—*the roofs of the houses* ; *litar mleka*—*a litre of milk*. The genitive case is used after many prepositions, e.g. *bez*—without ; *blizu*—near ; *do*—to ; *iz*—out of ; *od*—from, of.¹

The Dative is the case of the indirect object of a verb (usually preceded in English by the preposition ‘to’ : *pišem učiteljima*—*I’m writing to the teachers*).

The Accusative is the case of the direct object of a verb : *pišem roman*—*I’m writing a novel* ; *vidim krov*—*I see the roof*. The accusative case is used after certain prepositions, e.g. *kroz*—through ; *niz*—down. Some prepositions which may also govern other cases govern the accusative when they indicate *motion towards* ; e.g. *na* has the meaning of ‘on to’ or ‘to’, and *u* has the meaning of ‘into’ or ‘to’ when followed by the accusative : *idem u kupatilo*—*I’m going into the bathroom* ; *pada na krov*—*it’s falling on to the roof*.

The Vocative is the case used in addressing people : *Dobar dan, gospodine!*—*Good day, sir!*

The Instrumental case is used to denote the instrument employed in performing an action : *putujemo automobilom*—*we’re travelling by car* ; *pišete perom*—*you’re writing with a*

¹ You will learn the prepositions gradually, with the cases which they govern ; but a list, intended principally for reference, is given in the Appendix.

pen. Notice that no preposition is used with the noun in the instrumental case in such sentences. But when 'with' has the sense of 'together with', and the noun following it is seen as *accompanying* some action or some other noun, the preposition *sa* (with) is used, with the instrumental case: *idem sa Jovanom*—I'm going with John; *čaj sa šećerom*—tea with sugar.

The Locative case is used only after certain prepositions. When followed by the locative case, *na* means 'on' or 'at', and *u* means 'in': *sede na krovu*—they're sitting *on the roof*; *čitam u vrtu*—I'm reading *in the garden*. Compare the sentences in which these prepositions are followed by the accusative case, above.

Two examples of the declensions of masculine nouns are given here, to illustrate the difference between those whose stem¹ ends in a 'hard' consonant and those with a stem ending in a 'soft' consonant. The 'soft' consonants are: C, Č, Ć, Đ, J, LJ, NJ, Š, Ž, and sometimes R, T, and Z.

Where a hard consonant is followed by the vowel *o* in the masculine (and neuter) noun declensions, a soft consonant will be followed by the vowel *e*, except in the vocative singular of masculine nouns, as shown below.

The study of these declensions may seem at first a formidable task, and perhaps you will prefer to learn them by repeatedly practising phrases and sentences in which the various cases are used: e.g. *u gradu* (locative)—in the city; *vozom* (instrumental)—by train; *vidim Engleze* (accusative plural)—I see the Englishmen. For rapid progress in the language you are advised to memorise the declensions as soon as possible. Note any similarities between the case endings.

¹ The stem is that part of the noun to which the case endings are suffixed. In masculine nouns it is usually simply the nominative singular—the form which the dictionary supplies.

Hard : prozor (window). Soft : čekić (hammer)

	Singular		Plural	
Nominative	prozor	čekić	prozori, ¹	čekići
Genitive	prozora	čekića	prozora,	čekića, etc.
Dative	prozoru	čekiću	prozorima	
Accusative	prozor	čekić	prozore	
Vocative	prozore	čekiću	prozori	
Instrumental	prozorom	čekićem	prozorima	
Locative	prozoru	čekiću	prozorima	

The accusative singular of a masculine noun denoting a living creature takes the ending -a (like the genitive) instead of having the same form as the nominative, e.g. *sin* (son) has accusative singular *sina* ; *konj* (horse) has accusative singular *konja* ; *jugosloven* (a Yugoslav), accusative singular *jugoslovena*. (Notice the changes in the position of the stress accent in this and some other words.)

Most masculine nouns of one syllable, and some of more than one syllable, insert in the plural the syllable -ov- after a hard consonant, or -ev- after a soft consonant, between the stem and the plural endings, e.g. *krov*, pl. *krovovi*, *krovova*, *krovovima*, etc. ; *nož* (knife), pl. *noževi*, *noževa*, *noževima*, etc.²

The declensions of 'sin' (son) and 'muž' (husband) are therefore :

	Singular		Plural	
Nom.	sin	muž	sinovi	muževi
Gen.	sina	muža	sinova	muževa
Dat.	sinu	mužu	sinovima	muževima
Acc.	sina	muža	sinove	muževe

¹ In the poem on p. 9 *prozora* is in the genitive singular after the number 3. This will be explained in Lesson XIV.

² The nominative plural of these nouns will be given in the Vocabularies.

	Singular		Plural	
Voc.	sine	mužu	sinovi	muževi
Instr.	sinom	mužem	sinovima	muževima
Loc.	sinu	mužu	sinovima	muževima

Exercise : With the masculine nouns already given in this lesson, and those in the Vocabulary below, practise using the cases, in both singular and plural, as follows :

Genitive after *bez* (without) ; *blizu* (near).

Dative after *pišem* (I'm writing to) ; *govorim* (I'm speaking to).

Accusative after *vidim* (I see) ; *volim* (I like).

Vocative after *zbogom*¹ (good-bye).

Instrumental after *putujem* (I'm travelling—e.g. by train) ; and after *putujem sa* (I'm travelling with).

Locative after *na* and *u* (on, in).

Accusative and Dative after the verb *dajem* (I'm giving).

Examples : *bez krova*—without a roof ; *blizu prozora*—near the window ; *pišem lekarima*—I'm writing to the doctors ; *vidim profesore*—I see the professors ; *volim šećer*—I like sugar ; *zbogom, Jovane !*—good-bye John ! ; *putujem brodom*—I'm travelling by boat ; *putujem sa mužem*—I'm travelling with (my²) husband ; *na krovu*—on the roof ; *u džepu*—in a pocket ; *dajem pasoše studentu*—I'm giving the passports to the student.

VOCABULARY

automobil—car

čaj—tea

bioskop—cinema

dosta—enough

breg (pl. bregovi)—hill

džep (pl. džepovi)—pocket

brod (pl. brodovi)—ship

gde—where

¹ A contraction of *sa Bogom*—'with God' (*Bog*—'God').

² The possessive adjectives ('my', etc.) are omitted when the identity of the possessor is obvious.

gospodin ¹ —Mr., gentleman	pod (pl. podovi)—floor
grad (pl. gradovi)—town, city	profesor—professor
hleb—bread	roman—novel
je—is	slušam—I'm listening to (with accusative)
jezik—language, tongue	student—student
komad—piece	šećer—sugar
lekar—doctor	voz (pl. vozovi)—train
mladić—young man	zašto—why
passoš—passport	

Read and translate : 1. Mladić sedi u vozu i čita. 2. Imam komad hleba. 3. Piju čaj bez šećera. 4. Sedimo blizu prozora. 5. Ne pušimo u bioskopu. 6. Gospodin Petrović ima automobil i konja. 7. Jovan je sa gospodinom Petrovićem. 8. Studenti ne uče. 9. Profesor ima pasoš u džepu. 10. Mladići imaju noževe u džepovima. 11. Vidim gospodina Pavlovića kroz prozor. 12. Dajemo pasoše gospodinu Petroviću. 13. Idemo u Beograd. 14. Imam sina u Beogradu. 15. Zbogom, gospodine Pavloviću ! 16. Studenti ne slušaju profesora kad govori. 17. Profesor ne ide sa studentima u bioskop. 18. Ne čitam romane. 19. Ne putujemo brodom. 20. Zašto sedite na podu ? 21. Ne vide Jovana. 22. Sedim na bregu i gledam krovove. 23. Govorimo sa mladićem. 24. Razumem jezik. 25. Hvala. Dosta !

Translate : 1. Good morning,² Mr. Petrović ! 2. We're writing to the doctor. 3. Mr. Pavlović is a doctor. 4. He writes novels. 5. The students are sitting on the floor and smoking. 6. The sugar is in the tea. 7. He doesn't like towns. 8. He's not going to Belgrade without a passport. 9. Where's John ? 10. He's sitting near the window and reading. 11. We drink tea without sugar. 12. I'm travelling to Zagreb with

¹ The declension of the plural form of *gospodin* will be explained on p. 139.

² See p. 7.

Mr. Petrović. 13. We're travelling by train. 14. They are looking at the horse. 15. He's giving the passport to Mr. Pavlović. 16. Why aren't you sitting? 17. He always travels by boat. 18. Good-bye, John. 19. Where is the town? 20. I don't understand the language. 21. They don't smoke in the cinema. 22. I haven't (any)¹ sugar. 23. The hills are (su) near the town. 24. I don't see John on the ship. 25. The students aren't listening : they're asleep (they're sleeping).

¹ Use the genitive case without a preposition to denote 'any' or 'some' of a substance or liquid.

LESSON IV

NEUTER NOUNS. 'I CAN' AND 'I MUST'

Compare the declension of neuter nouns, given below, with that of masculine nouns. You will see that they are very similar, but that neuter nouns are somewhat simpler: their vocative and accusative are always the same as their nominative cases. There is the same difference as in masculine nouns between 'hard' and 'soft' stems. (Notice that sometimes *r* is hard, sometimes soft: jezero—lake; more—sea.) No syllable *ov* or *ev* is ever inserted in the plural.

	Hard : brdo (high hill).		Soft : polje (field)	
	Singular		Plural	
Nom.	brdo	polje	brda	polja, etc. (as for 'brda')
Gen.	brda	polja	brda	
Dat.	brdu	polju	brdima	
Acc.	brdo	polje	brda	
Voc.	brdo	polje	brda	
Instr.	brdom	poljem	brdima	
Loc.	brdu	polju	brdima	

A few neuter nouns have lost a syllable *-en-* or *-et-* in the nominative, vocative and accusative singular, e.g. *ime* (name) has singular: *ime*, *imeņa*, *imenu*, *ime*, *ime*, *imenom*, *imenu*; and plural: *imena*, *imena*, *imenima*, *imena*, *imena*, *imenima*, *imenima*. Similar nouns are *pleme* (tribe), *vreme* (time), *seme* (seed). *Dugme* (button) has singular: *dugme*, *dugmeta*, *dugmetu*, *dugme*, *dugme*, *dugmetom*, *dugmetu*; and plural: *dugmeta*, *dugmeta*, *dugmetima*, *dugmeta*, *dugmeta*, *dugmetima*, *dugmetima*. (Notice the position of the stress accent.) *Dete* (child) is declined in the singular like *dugme*; its plural will be discussed later (p. 140). All nouns with the 'diminutive' ending *-će* are declined like *dugme*, e.g. *unuće*—little

grandson (from unuk—grandson). *Nebo* (sky, heaven) is declined like *brdo* in the singular, but has a syllable *-es* inserted in the plural: *nebesa*, etc.

Exercise: Practise using the various cases, singular and plural, of the neuter nouns given in the Vocabulary at the end of this lesson, as you practised using masculine nouns (p. 17).

We mentioned in Lesson II that the present tenses of three verbs are irregular. One of these is *mogu*—I can: *mogu*, *možeš*, *može*, *možemo*, *možete*, *mogu*.

Moram—I must—is regular (like *imam*).

These and many other verbs which are generally followed by an infinitive in English, e.g. I must *travel*; he can *go*, may be (and usually are) followed instead by the conjunction *da*—‘that’, and the present tense: *moram da putujem* (literally ‘I must that I travel’); *može da ide* (‘he can that he goes’).

Da and a present tense may also correspond to an English infinitive with the sense of ‘in order to’, e.g. I’m going to Belgrade (in order) *to see* the town—*idem u Beograd da vidim grad*.

VOCABULARY

ili—or	predgrade—suburb
jasno—clearly	proleće—Spring
jezero—lake	provodim—I spend (time)
kupatilo—bathroom	restoran—restaurant
leto—summer	selo—village
meso—meat	sir—cheese
more—sea	stan (pl. stanovi)—flat, apartment
ogledalo—looking-glass	tražim—I look for, seek
ormar—cupboard	vino—wine
pero—pen	više—more
pivo—beer	volim—I like, love
pozorište—theatre	želim—I wish

Read and translate : 1. Jovan sedi u vozu i gleda brda i polja. 2. Volim da idem u pozorište. 3. Uvek pišem perom. 4. Ne možete da čitate. 5. Sedimo blizu prozora da gledamo more. 6. Oni ne vole pivo ; više vole vino. 7. Jovan obično provodi proleće i leto u selu blizu jezera. 8. Stanujem u stanu u predgrađu Londona. 9. Želim da vidim Dubrovnik. 10. Morate da čitate glasno. 11. Ne može da razume. 12. Kupatilo je ovde. 13. Ogledalo je u kupatilu. 14. Imam pero, ali ne mogu da pišem. 15. Ne govorite dosta jasno. 16. Profesori stanuju blizu pozorišta, i često idu u pozorište. 17. Sedimo ovde, pijemo pivo i pušimo. 18. Često ustajem rano i idem u selo. 19. Zimi volim gradove ; leti više volim selo. 20. Oni jedu hleb sa sirom ili mesom.

Translate : 1. We're looking for a restaurant. 2. Where's the professor ? 3. He's singing in the bathroom. 4. I can't understand when you speak. 5. The wine is with the beer in the cupboard. 6. I generally spend the spring and summer near a lake. 7. They are looking at the horses in the fields. 8. I'm looking for a looking-glass. 9. They can't write without pens. 10. We're going to the theatre. 11. They wish to travel by car to (*na*) the seaside (sea). 12. John wishes to speak the language well. 13. I must go into the fields. 14. I can't work when you're singing. 15. He's often in the theatre : he likes the theatres in London. 16. They live in a flat in a suburb of Zagreb. 17. We work in the villages near the sea. 18. I can see the lakes. 19. I'm giving (to) the child a piece of meat. 20. He's eating a piece of bread with the meat.

LESSON V

THE PRESENT TENSE OF THE VERB 'TO BE'.
QUESTIONS

The present tense of the verb 'to be' has two forms—a full form and a short form. The short forms are 'enclitic', which means that they must always be preceded by another word or words at the beginning of a sentence, after a punctuation mark, or after any pause in a sentence. (Only two other verbs—both auxiliary verbs—have enclitic forms.¹) The personal pronouns are therefore placed here before the short forms of this verb. Only when there is special emphasis on both pronoun and verb are these pronouns used with the *full* forms of this verb.

Full Form	Short (enclitic) Form	
jesam	ja sam	I am
jesi	ti si	thou art
jest	on, ona, ono je	he, she, it is
jesmo	mi smo	we are
jeste	vi ste	you are
jesu	oni, one, ona su	they (m., f., n.) are

The short, or enclitic, form is the one generally used: *studenti su u Beogradu*—the students are in Belgrade; *on je ovde or ovde je*—he is here. In the second of these alternatives (*ovde je*) notice that as the pronoun *on* (he) was omitted, the enclitic verb *je* could not be left in its original position; the adverb *ovde* was therefore placed before the enclitic verb.

When a conjunction, such as *kad* (when), *gde* (where), *da* (that) stands at the beginning of a sentence or clause, any enclitic verb in this sentence or clause must follow it immediately: *ne znam gde je Jovan*—I don't know where John

¹ These are the verbs which help to form the future tense and the conditional (pp. 62 and 116).

is ; ja sam u Zagrebu kad su studenti u Dubrovniku—I am in Zagreb when the students are in Dubrovnik ; znamo da je lekar u selu—we know that the doctor is in the village. But this rule does not apply to the conjunctions *i* (and) and *a* (and/but) ; in fact, enclitic verbs can never be placed immediately after these conjunctions.

The full forms, *jesam*, etc., have three uses :

1. For emphasis : (ja) *jesam* Englez—I *am* an Englishman.
2. In questions, followed by the word *li* (the ‘interrogative particle’) : *jesam li* (ja)—am I ? ; *jeste li* (vi)—are you ? The third person singular is an exception to this rule ; its short form is used in the interrogative : *je li* (on, ona, ono)—is he ? is she ? is it ? (The personal pronoun will be omitted unless it is necessary for the sake of clarity or emphasis.)
3. In answering questions with a simple ‘Yes, I am’, ‘Yes, he is’, etc. (It is unnecessary then to use the word *da*—‘yes’.) *Jeste li* (vi) Englez ? *Jesam*—Are you an Englishman ? Yes, I am. *Jesu li* (oni) blizu prozora ? *Jesu*.—Are they near the window ? Yes, they are. *Je li* (on) Hrvat ? *Jest*.—Is he a Croat ? Yes, he is.

If any other word or words occur in the answer to a question, the enclitic form of this verb must be used in this answer (as in most other statements), and not the full form : *Jeste li* Jugosloven ? Ne, ja sam Englez—Are you a Yugoslav ? No, I’m an Englishman. (Note that the pronoun *ja*, which it is usually better to omit, was necessary after the comma, in order that the enclitic verb *sam* should not stand at the beginning of its sentence.) *Jesu li* u kupatilu ? Ne, ovde su.—Are they in the bathroom ? No, they are here (here are).

Questions may also be introduced with the conjunction *da li*—‘whether’. The enclitic form of the verb ‘to be’ is then used : *Da li* su automobili na putu ? Are the cars on the road ? (*or* *Jesu li* automobili na putu ?).

Questions are similarly expressed, in either way, with all

other verbs : *Imaju li šećera ? or Da li imaju šećera ?*—Have they some (or any) sugar ? *Čekate li ? or Da li čekate ?*—are you waiting ?

The interrogative particle *li* is unnecessary if any interrogative word occurs in the sentence : *ko je ovde ?*—who is here ? ; *gde je kuća ?*—where is the house ?

The negative of the present tense of ‘ to be ’ is :

(ja) nisam	(I) am not
(ti) nisi	(thou) art not
(on, ona, ono) nije	(he, she, it) is not
(mi) nismo	(we) are not
(vi) niste	(you) are not
(oni, one, ona) nisu	(they) are not

There are no restrictions or rules applying to the use of this negative form. Thus a negative answer to the question ‘ *Da li su ovde ?* ’ (*or* ‘ *Jesu li ovde ?* ’)—Are they here ?—could be ‘ *Nisu* ’, or ‘ *Ne, nisu* ’, or ‘ *Ne, nisu ovde* ’, or ‘ *Ne, oni nisu ovde* ’. The forms without the pronoun are preferable.

Exercise : Using the present tense of the verb ‘ to be ’ compose statements (positive and negative), questions and answers, for every person, on the following model : *Ja sam student. Nisam student. Da li sam student ? Jesam li student ? Jesam. Nisam.*

Read and translate : 1. *Da li ste lekar ? Ne, nisam ; ja sam profesor.* 2. *Da li ste vi lekar ? Jesam.* 3. *Studenti nisu u Beogradu ; oni su u selu.* 4. *Jesu li ovde ? Jesu.* 5. *Da li je gospodin Pavlović u Dubrovniku ? Jest.* 6. *Vi ste Jugosloveni ; mi nismo.* 7. *Ne znam gde je selo.* 8. *Znamo da su Jovan i profesor u Londonu.* 9. *Gde su pasoši ? Ovde su.* 10. *Ko ste vi ?* 11. *Niste gospodin Pavlović.* 12. *Da li smo u Beogradu ? Nismo.* 13. *Jesu li na brodu ? Jesu.* 14. *Da li znate gde ste ?* 15. *Ne ; ne znam gde sam.*

Translate : 1. Who is Milan ? 2. He’s a Yugoslav. 3. Are

they in Belgrade? 4. No, they're not; they're in Sarajevo. 5. He's not in the car; he's here. 6. We don't know where the boat is. 7. I don't travel when Jovan is in London. 8. He's not a doctor. 9. Are we in a village? 10. Are the students here? 11. Yes, they are; they're with Mr. Petrović. 12. Are you a Yugoslav? No, I'm not. 13. You aren't Croats. 14. I know that (they) are here. 15. Is Jovan with the doctor? Yes, he is.

VOCABULARY

avion—airplane	mного—much, many (with gen.)
da—yes	naravno—of course
dalje—farther	ne—no
do—to, as far as (with gen.)	prtljag—luggage
dolazim—I come	putovanje—travel, travelling
Englez—Englishman	razgovor—conversation
gore—above	ručak—luncheon
hajdemo—let's go	ručam—I lunch
hotel—hotel ¹	sad, sada—now
hvala—thank you	sasvim—quite
jer—because	tamo—there
kažem—I say, tell	u redu—all right (in order)
kod—with, at (French 'chez'—with gen.)	vagon-restoran—dining-car
kofer—box, case	vrlo—very
mesto—place, space	zajedno—together
metnem—I put	zatim—then, after that
mislím—I think	znam—I know

Read and translate :

Razgovor u vozu

Imate li dosta mesta? (gen. after *dosta*).

Imam, hvala. Mogu da metnem kofer tamo gore.

¹ N.B. Stress the first syllable.

Imate mnogo prtljaga.

Imam, jer putujem u Dubrovnik, gde obično provodim proleće-i leto ; stanujem u hotelu blizu mora.

Vi ste Jugosloven ?

Nisam, ja sam Englez.

Dobro govorite.

Učim jezik ovde i kod profesora u Londonu.

Vi dolazite sada iz Londona ?

Da. Volim putovanje. Često putujem avionom, ali više volim vozove. A vi, gospodine, vi ste iz Beograda ?

Ne, ja sam iz Zagreba. Ja sam Hrvat.

Da li vi idete ponekad u London ?

Često. Tamo imam sina. On je student. Ah, dobro ! Kažu da možemo sada da idemo u vagon-restoran na (for) ručak. Hajdemo !

Translate :

Conversation in a train

You haven't enough room.

No, we haven't. We've too much (suviše, with gen.) luggage.

You can put the box up there (there up).

Good ! Now it's (omit ' it ') all right.

You speak very well. Are you Yugoslavs ?

No, we're not. We're Englishmen. But we spend a lot (mnogo) of time here. We're coming from Dubrovnik and travelling to Sarajevo ; then to Belgrade.

Good ; we can travel together as far as Sarajevo.

Do you know whether we can lunch on the train ?

Of course. In the dining car.

Do you know where the dining car is ?

I think that it's (omit ' it ') quite near.

I'm going for luncheon now. And you ?

Yes. Let's go.

LESSON VI

FEMININE NOUNS. SOME NOTES ON
CONSONANT CHANGES AND 'MOVEABLE A'

Most feminine nouns end *-a* in the nominative singular. There is no difference in declension between feminine nouns with stems ending in hard consonants and those ending in soft consonants, e.g. the ending of the instrumental singular is always *-om*, even when preceded by a soft consonant. There is also no difference between the accusative singular of feminine nouns denoting living creatures and of those denoting inanimate objects.

žena (woman)		
	Singular	Plural
Nom.	žena	žene
Gen.	žene	žena
Dat.	ženi	ženama
Acc.	ženu	žene
Voc.	ženo ¹	žene
Instr.	ženom	ženama
Loc.	ženi	ženama

Feminine nouns ending *-ica* in the nominative singular have vocative singular *-ice*: *gospodica* (Miss, young lady), vocative: *gospođice*.

Practise using the following nouns, where appropriate, in the genitive, dative, accusative, vocative, instrumental and locative cases (singular and plural), as you practised the declensions of masculine and neuter nouns in Lessons III and IV: *kuća* (house), *soba* (room), *stolica* (chair), *torba* (bag, basket), *šolja* (cup), *čaša* (tumbler), *crkva* (church), *gospođa* (Madam, lady), *drugarica* (friend, f.), *studentkinja* (student, f.).

¹ Occasionally the form of the vocative is the same as that of the nominative, particularly in girls' names and nouns denoting relationships, e.g. *tetka Olga!* (Aunt Olga!), *mama!* (mummy!).

In nouns of all three genders whose stems end in the consonants *k*, *g*, or *h*, these consonants change to *c*, *z*, and *s* respectively when they occur before the vowel *i*; e.g. *putnik* (traveller) has nominative plural *putnici*, and dative, instrumental, and locative plural *putnicima*; *ruka* (hand) has dative and locative singular *ruci*; *knjiga* (book) has dative and locative singular *knjizi*; *snaha* (daughter-in-law) has dative and locative singular *snasi*.¹

Other nouns in which these changes take place are: *vojniki* (soldier), *reka* (river), *slika* (picture), *biblioteka* (library).

Translate: *govorim sa putnicima*; *vojnici su ovde*; *imam šolju u ruci*; *brod je na reci*; *putnici pevaju*; *slike su u knjizi*; *putujem sa vojnicima*; *jeste li u biblioteci*?

Translate: The church isn't in (na) the picture; the picture is in (u) the book; the travellers are on a boat on the river; I'm speaking with the soldiers; we're writing to the soldiers; he has a glass in (his) hand; the books are in the library.

In some nouns (of all genders) whose stem ends in two consonants these consonants are separated in the genitive plural by the vowel *a*, e.g. *devojka* (girl) has genitive plural *devojaka*; *pesma* (poem, ballad, song)—*pesama*; *pismo* (letter)—*pisama*. Some masculine nouns insert *a* between two final consonants in the nominative singular (and in the accusative singular when this is the same as the nominative singular, i.e. when the noun denotes an inanimate object) as well as in the genitive plural, e.g. nom. and acc. sing. *ritam* (rhythm), gen. pl. *ritama* (but gen. sing. *ritma*, dat. sing. *ritmu*, etc.). No general rules can be given regarding the words in which these changes take place, but they will be indicated wherever necessary in this book.

Translate: in rhythm; in a song; many rhythms; many songs; enough letters; to a girl; of the girls.

¹ The form *snahi* also occurs.

A certain number of feminine nouns have nominative singular ending in a consonant,¹ e.g. *stvar* (thing, matter, affair). Their declension is very simple :

	Singular	Plural
Nom.	<i>stvar</i>	<i>stvari</i>
Gen.	<i>stvari</i>	<i>stvari</i>
Dat.	<i>stvari</i>	<i>stvarima</i>
Acc.	<i>stvar</i>	<i>stvari</i>
Voc.	<i>stvar</i>	<i>stvari</i>
Instr.	<i>stvari</i>	<i>stvarima</i>
Loc.	<i>stvari</i>	<i>stvarima</i>

There is an alternative instrumental singular ending, *-ju* (*stvarju*), which is generally used when no preposition precedes the noun.

Other feminine nouns declined like *stvar* are : *noć* (night ; instr. sing. *noću* : ' by night '), *reč* (word ; instr. sing. *rečju*), *varoš* (small town), *vest* (item of news ; *vesti*—' the news ').

The gender of nouns belonging to this declension will be indicated in the Vocabularies ; otherwise it may be assumed that nouns ending in a consonant in the nominative singular are masculine.

VOCABULARY

Dalmacija—Dalmatia	ključ (pl. ključevi)—key
dan—day	kuhinja—kitchen
danju—by day	ležim—I'm lying
gubim—I lose	muzika—music
Engleskinja—Englishwoman	negde—somewhere
fijoka—drawer	o (with loc.)—about, con-
Jugoslavija—Yugoslavia	cerning
karta—map	polica—shelf
klupa—bench, seat	pred (with instr.)—in front of

¹ A list is given in the Appendix.

salon—drawing-room
sigurno—certainly
te—so ; and so
trava—grass

ulica—street
verovatno—probably
vidim—I see
vrt (pl. vrtovi)—garden

Read and translate : 1. Čitate li vesti ? Ne čitam vesti, čitam roman. 2. Gde su knjige ? One ¹ su u sobi. 3. Da li su na policama ? Nisu. Šolje i čaše su na policama. 4. Jesu li u ormaru ? Jesu. 5. Jeste li u kući ? Nisam. Ja sam na ulici. 6. Je li kuća blizu ulice ? Jest. 7. Da li je gospodin Petrović u varoši ? Nije. Ne znam gde je. 8. Vidite li gospodina Petrovića ? Da. On je u vrtu sa gospođom Petrović.² 9. Razumete li ? Ne razumem. 10. Imamo li hleba ? Nemamo. 11. Gde je sir ? Znam da je sir u torbi na polici u kuhinji. 12. Imate li slike Jugoslavije ? Imam. One su u knjizi. 13. Da li imate knjigu sa slikama ? Imam ; ovde je. 14. Gledate li slike ? Da. Gledam mnogo slika. 15. Da li putujete u Jugoslaviju ? Da. Često putujem u Dubrovnik. 16. Da li obično slušate mnogo pesama u Dalmaciji ? Da. Tamo mnogo pevaju. 17. Vi pišete mnogo pisama. 18. Jesu li putnici u crkvi ? Nisu ; oni govore sa vojnicima. 19. Mislim da vi radite noću. Ne, ja radim danju, a spavam noću. 20. Razumete li sada ? Da, sada razumem dobro.

Translate : 1. Is he reading a novel ? No, he's reading the news. 2. Are you looking at pictures ? Yes ; they're in a book. 3. Does he sleep well ? No, he studies by night. 4. Where are the books ? They're not here. 5. Are they on the shelves ? I don't know. 6. I think that Mrs. Petrović knows where they are, so I'm looking for Mrs. Petrović now. 7. Do you understand when I speak ? I usually understand when you don't

¹ The pronoun is in the feminine plural because it refers to a feminine plural noun (*knjige*).

² Surnames of men are declined, but not of women. Foreign surnames after *gospodin* need not be declined.

speak too quickly, but I don't understand Mr. Petrović. 8. Is he a Yugoslav? Yes, he is. 9. Is Mrs. Petrović an English-woman? No, she's not. 10. Where is she? She's with Mr. Petrović. 11. Where are they? Are they in the house or in the garden? 12. I think that they're in the garden in front of the house. 13. Are you listening to the rhythm of the song? Yes; I like music. 14. I know that the woman is an English-woman. 15. Yes; and the husband is, I think, a Yugoslav.

Read and translate: Ne mogu da vidim gospođu Petrović. Možda je u kuhinji. Ne, nije. Mislim da je u salonu: traži knjige o Dalmaciji i slike Dubrovnika. Ne zna gde su: ona stalno gubi stvari. Kaže da zna da su knjige negde sa kartama i slikama, i misli da su u fijoci, ali sada ne zna gde je ključ od fijeke. Traži ključ. Sigurno misli da Milan zna gde je ključ, jer ona sada traži Milana; gleda kroz prozor; ali on verovatno čita u biblioteci, gde obično provodi dan. Ne, on sedi na klupi u vrtu pred kućom; knjige o Dalmaciji leže na travi.

Translate:

'Mrs. Petrović, where are you? Are you in the kitchen?'

'No, I'm not. I'm here.'

'Where? Are you in the drawing-room?'

'Yes, I am. I'm looking for the book about Yugoslavia—the book with the pictures. Do you know where it is? I'm constantly losing things.'

'I know that it's with the maps; I think that they're in the drawer. Have you the key, please? Thank you. No, they're not here.'

'Where's John? Perhaps (možda) he knows where it is.'

'I don't think he's¹ in the house. He usually spends the day in the library. Why are you looking through the window?'

'I'm looking for John; perhaps he's in the garden. Yes, there he is. He's sitting on the grass with the book in (his) hand.'

¹ Say: 'I think that he is not.'

LESSON VII

THE COMPOUND PAST TENSE. NOTES ON THE FORMATION OF THE PRESENT TENSE

Only one past tense is in common use in Serbo-Croat. This tense can therefore be said to correspond to all the past tenses in use in English. Like all but one of the English past tenses, this is a compound tense. It is always composed of the present tense of the verb 'to be' and a participle—usually called the active past participle. This past tense, e.g. *ja sam pevao*,¹ may therefore correspond to English 'I sang', 'I have sung', 'I was singing', 'I had sung'.

In order to form the active past participle (*pevao*) it is necessary to look at the infinitive of the verb. The infinitive of most verbs ends in the syllable *-ti*, preceded by one of the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, or *u*, e.g. *pevati*—to sing; *videti*—to see; *biti*—to be; *čuti*—to hear. The active past participle, which has masculine, feminine and neuter, singular and plural forms, is formed by substituting one of the following endings for the *-ti* ending of the infinitive :

	Singular	Plural
Masc.	-o ²	-li
Fem.	-la	-le
Neut.	-lo	-la

Examples :

(From *pevati*): *pevao*, *pevala*, *pevalo*; *pevali*, *pevale*, *pevala*.

(From *videti*): *video*, *videla*, *videlo*; *videli*, *videle*, *videla*.

(From *biti*): *bio*, *bila*, *bilo*; *bili*, *bile*, *bila*.

(From *čuti*): *čuo*, *čula*, *čulo*; *čuli*, *čule*, *čula*.

¹ *N.B.*—To be pronounced as three syllables, with the *o* as in English 'got'.

² This *o*—a vowel which one does not normally associate with masculine endings—was formerly *l*. (See p. 112.)

The only general exception to this rule is that in the *ije-*dialect verbs with infinitive ending *-jeti* have masculine nominative singular of this participle ending *-io* (*vidjeti, vidio, vidjela*). *Umreti*—to die, is exceptional : active past participle *umřo, umrla, umrlo*, etc. ; the *ř* in the masculine nominative singular is usually printed thus to indicate that it is a separate syllable : *um-r-o*.¹

This participle agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number. Examples of this tense in use are, then :

vojn^{ik} je bio—the soldier was (has been, was being, had been).

žena je pevala—the woman sang (has sung, etc.).

selo je gorelo—the village burned, etc. (*goreti*—to burn).

putnici su videli—the travellers saw, etc.

devojke su imale—the girls had (*imati*—to have).

putovanja su počela—the journeys began (*početi*—to begin).

Ja sam pevao—I sang (masc.) ; ja sam pevala—I sang (fem.) ; mi smo pevali—we sang (masc., or people of both sexes) ; mi smo pevale—we sang (fem.) ; vi ste pevali—you sang (masc. pl. ; or people of both sexes ; or one man or *one woman* with whom one is not familiar enough to address her as *ti* : *ti si pevala*) ; oni su pevali—they sang (masc., or masc. and fem.) ; one su pevale—they sang (fem.).

Participles agreeing with two or more masculine subjects or with two or more feminine subjects are masculine plural or feminine plural respectively ; but in sentences with two or more subjects which are all neuter or of mixed genders the active past participle will be masculine plural : vino i pivo su bili u ormaru—the wine and beer were in the cupboard ; žena i dete su pevali—the woman and child were singing. (This rule also applies to adjectives.)

¹ Active past participles of certain verbs may sometimes be regarded as adjectives : ona je iznemogla—she is exhausted (*iznemoci*—to become exhausted).

As the auxiliary verb is enclitic and therefore cannot stand at the beginning of a sentence or clause, it will when necessary follow the participle instead of preceding it, as in the second of each of the following pairs of examples :

ja sam video brod ¹—video sam brod—(I) saw the ship.

mi smo bili u vrtu—bili smo u vrtu—(we) were in the garden.

ona je pevala pesmu—pevala je pesmu—(she) was singing a song.

ovde su ručali—ručali su ovde—(they) lunched here.

Exercise : Form active past participles from the following verbs, and practise the formation of their past tenses :

čitati—to read

razgovarati—to talk, converse

gledati—to look at

razumeti—to understand

govoriti—to speak

ručati—to lunch

kazati—to tell

sedeti—to be sitting

ležati—to be lying

slušati—to listen, listen to

metnuti—to put

spavati—to sleep

misliti—to think

stanovati—to live, reside

morati—to be obliged,
to have to

tražiti—to look for, seek

učiti—to study

pisati—to write

ustajati—to get up

piti—to drink

voleti—like, love

pušiti—to smoke

znati—to know

putovati—to travel

želeti—to wish, desire

The rules for forming the interrogative and negative of the present tense of 'to be' apply similarly to this past tense, i.e. questions are asked :

jeste li videli ?—did you see ? (have you seen ?, etc.).

je li pevao ?—did he sing (was he singing ?, etc.).

or da li ste videli ? da li je pevao ?

¹ After a subject or adverbial phrase consisting of three or more words, or several syllables, the active past participle often precedes the auxiliary verb, e.g. Gospodin Jovan Petrović *video je* brod.

Negative :

(ja) nisam video—I didn't see (haven't seen, etc.).

(mi) nismo videli—we didn't see, etc.

As the negative form of the present tense of 'to be' is not enclitic it will never be necessary to place the negative auxiliary verb (*nisam, nisi, nije*, etc.) after the participle.

Exercise : Translate—did you speak ? was he writing ? did she smoke ? were they talking ? have you understood ? was I sitting ? were they listening ? was she sleeping ? were you studying ? did he know ? Give both positive and negative answers to these questions, e.g. *da, govorio sam (or ja sam govorio)* ; *ne, nisam govorio*.

Questions in the negative usually have an element of surprise in them, and questions of this kind may be introduced by *zar* : *zar niste videli crkvu ?*—do you mean to say you didn't see the church ? ; *zar je on ovde ?*—is he really here ?

The active past participles of verbs whose infinitive does not end in *-ti* preceded by a vowel are less easily deduced from the infinitive, and must usually be learned together with the infinitive. These infinitives end either *-ći* or *-sti*, e.g. *ići*—to go ; *tresti*—to shake. *ići* has active past participle *išao, išla, išlo* ; *išli, išle, išla* ; *moći*—to be able—has *mogao, mogla, moglo* ; *mogli, mogle, mogla* ; *tresti* has *tresao, tresla, treslo* ; *tresli, tresle, tresla*. Notice that in these participles the vowel *a* is inserted in the masculine singular only, before the final *o*.

Since the infinitives of most of the verbs which you have already met have been given in this chapter, you may have noticed that it is not always possible to deduce from the infinitive which of the three types of present tense endings a verb will take. You will therefore need to learn the infinitive, the first person singular of the present tense, and the masculine singular form of the active past participle of verbs ending *-ći* or *-sti*, and the infinitive and first person singular of the

present tense of most other verbs ; e.g. *ići, idem, išao ; tresti, tresem, tresao, jesti* (to eat), *jedem, jeo ; videti, vidim ; imati, imam ; kazati, kažem*. You will find that everything you need in order to form the tenses you will be using has then been supplied. A list of common verbs, giving these necessary parts, will be found in the Appendix. Verbs with the infinitive endings *-iti, -nuti, and -ovati* have not been included as these always have present tenses *-im, -nem, and -ujem* respectively e.g. *misliti, mislim ; metnuti, metnem ; putovati, putujem*.¹

Notice, however, that verbs like *piti* (to drink), *liti* (to pour) whose infinitive consists of only two syllables, have present tense ending *-jem* : *pijem, lijem* ; and other verbs formed from these by means of prefixes have the same endings in the present tense, e.g. *upiti* (to drink in, absorb), *upijem*. The present tense of the verb ' to be ' is of course an exception.

VOCABULARY

adresa—address	izvaditi—to draw out
bolje—better	kafana—café
dakle—so ; well then	kasno—late
daleko—far away	koliko—how much, how many (with gen.)
dok—while	kupiti—to buy
dugo—for a long time	leći, legnem, legao, legla—to lie down
iako—although	ljudi—people
inostranstvo—abroad	međutim—however
izbrojiti—to count out	mleko—milk
izgled—view	
izgovoriti—to pronounce	

¹ In the Vocabularies given in this Grammar the first person singular of the present tense and the active past participle (masc. sing., and—where it may be helpful—fem. sing.) are given when these cannot be deduced from the infinitive. It can be assumed that verbs with infinitive ending *-ati* have present tense ending *-am*, etc., unless the present tense ending is indicated.

moći, mogu, mogao, mogla— to be able	rezervirati (-am)—to reserve sa (with gen.)—from, from off
napolju—outside	samo—only
naprotiv—on the contrary	srećom—fortunately
na žalost ¹ —unfortunately	stanica—station
nešto—something	stići, stignem, stigao, stigla— to arrive
novac (gen. novca)—money	suviše—too much
odmah—immediately	šofer—driver
oko (preposition, with gen.)— around	šta?—what?
platiti—to pay	šteta—a pity
po (prepn. with loc.)—on, in, about	taksi—taxi
posle (prepn. with gen.)— after	te—and so
pre nego što (conjunction)— before	teško meni!—dear me!
primetiti—to notice	učiniti—to do
pružiti—to pass, offer	unapred—in advance
raditi—to work, do	uzeti, uzmem—to take
reći, rekнем, rekao, rekla—to say	večerati—to have supper
	već—already
	za (with acc.)—for
	zaboraviti—to forget

Read and translate: 1. Dugo smo stanovali u Ljubljani. 2. Kad sam ja govorila, on nije razumeo. 3. Da li ste tražili gospođu Simić? 4. Nismo bili ovde. 5. Bili smo u vrtu kad je on stigao. 6. Dok ste vi spavali on je radio. 7. Često smo putovali kad sam ja bila dete. 8. Niste pisali pismo. 9. Da li ste primetili izgled sa prozora? 10. Jovan je išao sa vojnicima. 11. Sedeli su u kafani, razgovarali, pili i pevali. 12. Da li ste mislili da sam zaboravila knjige? 13. Zar niste spavali posle putovanja? 14. Bile smo u varoši, i kupile mnogo stvari.

¹ In this, and in a few other phrases, the stress accent falls on the preposition.

15. Srećom sam čitala pažljivo kad sam primetila da je ¹ profesor u biblioteci. 16. Niste razumeli jer niste slušali. 17. Ustajali smo rano kad smo bili u selu. 18. Selo je gorelo, a oni su samo gledali. 19. Već su ručali. 20. Nije mogao da jede, ali je pio mleka.

Translate: 1. Unfortunately I wasn't reading when I saw the professor in the library. 2. Did he say you're working too much? 3. No, on the contrary; he said I must work more. 4. The café was in front of the hotel. 5. I can't pay for the taxi. 6. She said that she was an Englishwoman. 7. He didn't always get up early. 8. You haven't noticed the view from the windows. 9. He's already forgotten the address. 10. I haven't understood. 11. I couldn't understand when they spoke. 12. We've already lunched on the train. 13. Have you forgotten the passports? 14. She arrived by aeroplane. 15. The travellers were looking at the hills and lakes. 16. The church was near the hotel. 17. I saw the hotel when we were in the train. 18. Were they sitting on chairs or on the floor? 19. They only talked and smoked. 20. He said he liked the rhythm of the songs.

Read and translate: Gospodin Nikolić je unapred rezervirao sobe u hotelu. Bilo je kasno kad je stigao vozom, sa gospođom Nikolić, na stanicu. Uzeli su taksi ali na žalost, kad su govorili sa šoferom on je rekao: » Ne razumem.« Šteta, jer su mislili da govore ² vrlo dobro. Međutim, izgovorili su adresu hotela dosta jasno, te su uskoro stigli u hotel; bio je blizu stanice. Gospodin Nikolić nije znao

¹ In 'reported speech' the tense used is that which the speaker actually uses: she said the book was on the shelf—rekla je da je knjiga na polici (because what she actually said was 'the book is on the shelf'). This rule applies to similar clauses after any verb indicating that something went on in the mind of the subject of this verb.

² See note to Serbo-Croatian sentence 15, above.

koliko da plati za taksi, te je izvadio nešto novca ¹ iz džepa i pružio šoferu. Verovatno šofer nije uzeo suviše, jer je pažljivo izbrojio novac.

Mogli su da vide park oko hotela, iako je bila noć. Ljudi su sedeli, pili i razgovarali napolju u kafani pred hotelom. Gospodin i gospođa Nikolić želeli su samo da spavaju ; brzo su večerali u hotelu i odmah legli.

Translate :

‘ What did you do when you arrived at the station ? ’

‘ We took a taxi. We thought we knew the language very well, but the driver didn’t understand when we spoke. Fortunately he did understand the address of the hotel ; it was not far from the station. I offered the driver some money, but I don’t know how much he took.’

‘ Dear me ! You see (that) it’s better to know the language well before you travel abroad.’ ²

‘ I know. But I don’t think that he took too much, because he counted the money very carefully.’

‘ So you arrived at the hotel.’

‘ Yes,—a hotel with a café and (with) a park. Of course, we couldn’t see the park by night. We had reserved the rooms in advance. We had already dined on the train and only wanted to sleep, so we lay down immediately, and slept for a long time.

¹ nešto novca (literally ‘ something of money ’)—some money.

² Use *po* with the locative.

LESSON VIII

ADJECTIVES

Adjectives agree with the nouns which they qualify in gender, number, and case.

Most adjectives in Serbo-Croat have two forms—definite and indefinite. Before a definite adjective the definite article ‘the’ may be understood, and before an indefinite adjective the indefinite article ‘a’: *mladi student*—the young student (definite); *mlad student*—a young student (indefinite). In practice, however, the definite form of the adjective is used far more than the indefinite form, and many adjectives (including all those whose masculine nominative singular always ends in *-i*, such as the numerous adjectives with the characteristic Slavonic *-ski* ending) have only a definite form. Some adjectives have only an indefinite form.

The declension of definite adjectives differs in form from that of indefinite adjectives only in the masculine and neuter singular. In the feminine singular, and throughout the plural, the difference is only one of intonation or vowel length.

DEFINITE

	Masculine	Singular Feminine	Neuter
Nom.	<i>mladi</i>	<i>mlada</i>	<i>mlado</i>
Gen.	<i>mladog(a)</i>	<i>mlade</i>	<i>mladog(a)</i>
Dat.	<i>mladom(e)</i>	<i>mladoj</i>	<i>mladom(e)</i>
Acc.	<i>mladi, mladog(a)</i>	<i>mladu</i>	<i>mlado</i>
Voc.	<i>mladi</i>	<i>mlada</i>	<i>mlado</i>
Instr.	<i>mladim</i>	<i>mladom</i>	<i>mladim</i>
Loc.	<i>mladom(e)</i>	<i>mladoj</i>	<i>mladom(e)</i>

The vowels enclosed in brackets are usually dropped. Not all adjectives which are declined as definite adjectives have masculine nominative singular ending *-i*.

	Plural		
	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
Nom.	mladi	mlade	mlada
Gen.	mladih	mladih	mladih
Dat.	mladim	mladim	mladim
Acc.	mlade	mlade	mlada
Voc.	mladi	mlade	mlada
Instr.	mladim	mladim	mladim
Loc.	mladim	mladim	mladim

INDEFINITE

	Masc. sing.	Neut. sing.
Nom.	mlad	mlado
Gen.	mlada	mlada
Dat.	mladu	mladu
Acc.	mlad, mlada	mlado
Voc.	—	—
Instr.	mladim	mladim
Loc.	mladu	mladu

In the masculine singular the forms of the accusative which resemble the genitive are used when the adjective qualifies a noun denoting a living creature : *imam malog sina*—I have a little son ; *but* : *imam mali nož*—I have a (or the) little knife.

The stem of the adjective *mlad* ends in a hard consonant. The declension of adjectives with stems ending in a soft consonant differs from that of *mlad* only in the masculine and neuter singular, in those cases where the hard consonant was followed by the vowel *o* :

	Masc. sing.	Neut. sing.
Nom.	vruć (hot)	vruće
Gen.	vrućeg(a)	vrućeg(a)
Dat.	vrućem(u)	vrućem(u)

	Masc. sing.	Neut. sing.
Acc.	vruć, vrućeg(a)	vruće
Voc.	vruć	vruće
Instr.	vrućim	vrućim
Loc.	vrućem(u)	vrućem(u)

In many adjectives the vowel *a* is inserted to form an extra syllable when the adjective would otherwise end in two consonants—i.e. *only* in the masculine nominative singular, and in the masculine accusative singular when this has the same form as the nominative (that is, when it qualifies a noun denoting an inanimate object). Adjectives of this kind are usually declined only as definite adjectives, e.g. *dobar* (good) has genitive *dobrog(a)*, plural *dobri*. Hence: *dobar dan*—good day; *but dobro jutro*—good morning (neuter). Both the masculine and feminine singular of such adjectives will be given in vocabularies here, e.g. *dobar, dobra*.

The rule for the agreement of adjectives with *vi* is the same as that given in Lesson VII for the agreement of the active past participle: *vi ste dobri*—you are good—may refer to one man or one woman with whom one is not familiar, or to masc. pl. or masc. and fem. pl.¹

Adjectives used ‘predicatively’—i.e. after parts of the verb ‘to be’ and not followed by a noun—are if possible² in the indefinite form: *he is young—on je mlad*.

Demonstrative adjectives are declined as definite adjectives with hard stems, but differ from other adjectives in their masculine nominative singular endings, having *-aj* instead of the usual *-i*. English has only two forms: ‘this’ and ‘that’, with their plurals ‘these’ and ‘those’, but Serbo-Croat has three: *ovaj (ova, ovo)*—this; *taj (ta, to)*—that (not far from

¹ See also Lesson VII (p. 34) for rules for the agreement of an adjective with two or more nouns.

² i.e. unless the adjective has only a definite form.

the speaker); *onaj* (*ona, ono*)—that (farther away); plurals: *ovi, ove, ova*; *ti, te, ta*; *oni, one, ona*. *Taj* is declined (masc.): *taj, toga, tome, taj* (or *toga*), etc.; (fem.): *ta, te, toj*, etc.

Exercise: Insert demonstrative adjectives, or appropriate adjectives from the Vocabularies on pages 46 and 48 in the Serbo-Croatian sentences at the end of Lessons III, IV, and VI.

Used as demonstrative *pronouns*, as the subject of the verb 'to be', only the neuter singular forms *ovo, to, ono* are used, whatever the gender and number of the noun to which they refer, e.g. *ovo je bila lepa crkva*—this was a beautiful church; *ono su stare stvari*—those are old things.

The possessive adjectives *njegov* (his, its), *njen*¹ (her), *njihov* (their) are now usually declined as definite adjectives (with hard stems): *u njihovom selu*—in their village. *Naš* (our) and *vaš* (your) are also definite adjectives (but with soft stems): *u vašem gradu*—in your city. *Moj* (my) and *tvoj* (thy) may also be declined as definite adjectives with soft stems, e.g. *moj, mojeg(a), mojem(u)*, etc., or as follows:

	Singular			Plural		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>moj</i>	<i>moja</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moji</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moja</i>
Gen.	<i>mog(a)</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>mog(a)</i>	<i>mojih</i>	<i>mojih</i>	<i>mojih</i>
Dat.	<i>mom(e), mom(u)</i>	<i>mojoj</i>	<i>mom(e), mom(u)</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>
Acc.	<i>moj, moga</i>	<i>moju</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moja</i>
Voc.	<i>moj</i>	<i>moja</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moji</i>	<i>moje</i>	<i>moja</i>
Instr.	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojom</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>
Loc.	<i>mom(e), mom(u)</i>	<i>mojoj</i>	<i>mom(e), mom(u)</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i>	<i>mojim</i> ²

¹ Also *njezin*. ² All plural *-im* suffixes have also a (rare) *-ima* form.

Another possessive adjective, *svoj*, is declined like *moj*. *Svoj* should be used in place of the other possessive adjectives when the thing possessed belongs to the subject of the sentence, e.g. *žena nosi svoju torbu*—the woman is carrying her (own) bag. ‘*Žena nosi njenu torbu*’ would mean ‘the woman is carrying her (another woman’s) bag’.

Possessive pronouns (mine, etc.) have the same form as possessive adjectives: *moja je*—it’s mine (referring to a feminine object).

The possessive adjective is often omitted with nouns denoting relatives, or parts of the body, if the identity of the possessor is obvious.

Exercise : Insert possessive adjectives before the nouns in the Serbo-Croatian sentences at the end of Lessons III, IV, and VI.

Possessive adjectives may be formed from proper names of people, or nouns denoting persons, by adding *-ov* after a hard consonant, or *-ev* after a soft consonant, to the stems of names or nouns with masculine or neuter forms, and *-in* to the stems of those ending *-a*. *Jovanov* (John’s) is thus formed from *Jovan*, *Pavlov* (Paul’s) from *Pavle*, *kraljev* (the king’s) from *kralj*, *babin* (granny’s) from *baba*. These adjectives agree (like other adjectives) with the nouns which they qualify, and are declined as definite or indefinite adjectives: *video sam Pavlovu sestru*—I’ve seen Paul’s sister; *bili smo u Jovanovom (or Jovanovu) selu*—we were in John’s village. These possessive adjectives can be formed only from names or nouns which are not themselves qualified by an adjective (or possessive adjective); the genitive must otherwise be used: *to je kuća njegove babe*—that’s his grandmother’s house (the house of his grandmother); *knjige mladog Jovana*—young John’s books.

Most adverbs of manner are the same in form as the neuter

singular, nominative, of the corresponding adjectives : *običan*—usual ; *obično* (neut. sing.)—usually ; *dobar*—good ; *dobro*—well ; *pažljiv*—careful ; *pažljivo*—carefully. But adjectives whose masculine nominative singular ends *-ski* have corresponding adverbs ending *-ski*, e.g. *prijateljski*—friendly ; in a friendly manner.

Names of countries ending *-ska* or *-čka*, e.g. *Engleska* (England), *Nemačka* (Germany), are feminine adjective forms : the noun *zemlja* (country) is understood after them. They are therefore declined as adjectives : *u Engleskoj*—in England. Adjectives formed from the names of countries or from other place names are written with small initial letters, e.g. *engleski*.

VOCABULARY

avionska pošta—air mail	narodni—national, folk
brz—quick, fast	nov—new
cigareta—cigarette	olovka—pencil
crn—black ; red (of wine)	poslati, pošljem—to send
dajte—give (imperative)	predavanje—lecture
dopisnica—postcard	preko—across (with gen.)
dosadan (f. dosadna)—boring	preporučeni—registered (of letters, etc.)
drag—dear	prijatelj (f. prijateljica)—friend
gluv—deaf	primiti—to receive
haljina—dress	rečenica—sentence
jedan (f. jedna)—one	rukav—sleeve
jeftin—cheap	sestra—sister
kaput—coat	sinoć—last night
ljubazan (f. ljubazna)—kind, amiable	Srpkinja—Serbian woman
majka—mother	srpskohrvatski (or hrvatskosrpski)—Serbo-Croatian
marka—postage stamp	
mi—to me	
most—bridge	

šešir—hat	vrh—top, summit
širok—wide	zaista—really, indeed
tako—so, thus	zanimljiv—interesting
učtiv—polite	zelen—green
važan (f. važna)—important	živeti, živim—to live
veliki—large	

Read and translate : 1. Čitali su njegovu novu knjigu u mojoj sobi. 2. Da li ste videli njenu zelenu haljinu, i njen crni kaput sa širokim rukavima ? 3. Uvek putujem brzim vozom. 4. Gde je vaša kuća ? Da li je u ovom predgrađu ? 5. Njegovo predavanje je bilo zanimljivo. 6. Zar niste videli novi most preko one reke ? 7. Mlade Srпкиnje su pevale svoje narodne pesme. 8. Dajte ovaj šešir onoj staroj gospođi. 9. Onaj grad je vrlo lep. 10. Jovanov sin stanuje u našem stanu u Londonu. 11. Sestrina kuća nije velika, ali je u lepom selu. 12. Te knjige su sada njihove. 13. Sinoć sam govorio s vašim sestrama u bioskopu. 14. Zašto pišete ove srpskohrvatske rečenice tako brzo ? 15. Stalno puši jeftine cigarete i pije crno vino. 16. Ovo je naša majka a to je moj sin. 17. Slušali su profesorovo predavanje vrlo pažljivo, jer je bilo važno. 18. Na žalost predavanja onog starog profesora su često suviše dosadna. 19. Primio sam ovo pismo od svoga prijatelja u Engleskoj. On mi uvek piše na srpskohrvatskom.¹ 20. Ne mogu da pišem ovom jeftinom olovkom.

Translate : 1. He's going to the theatre with my sister. 2. You can't talk with that deaf old gentleman. 3. Have you received good news from your son ? 4. John's mother has bought this new house. 5. We usually work in our rooms. 6. I must read your new book ; I've heard that it's very interesting. 7. She likes to lunch in a good hotel. 8. He bought one ² stamp for his registered letter. 9. These young

¹ ' in Serbo-Croatian '. The noun *jeziku* (locative case) is understood.

² Decline *jedan, jedna, jedno* as a definite adjective.

Englishwomen are learning our language. 10. You can see their village from the top of that high hill. 11. That's the woman in the green coat. 12. This is an important letter. 13. You are really very kind, dear Mrs. Petrović! 14. We travelled by fast train and soon arrived at a big station. 15. I don't like living (to live) in large towns. 16. I've sent your postcard by air mail. 17. You really must see his new car and chauffeur! 18. He's talking to (with) an amiable and polite young lady. 19. They've received registered letters from their friends abroad (*u*, with *loc.*). 20. Did you know that our old doctor now lives in this village?

VOCABULARY

advokat—solicitor, lawyer	naročito—particularly
ako—if	ništa—nothing
brži—quicker	ništa ne mari—it doesn't matter
dakle—so, well then	pošta—post office; mail
evo (with <i>gen.</i>)—here is, here are	potreban (f. potrebna)— necessary
(eto, eno—there is, there are)	sitan (f. sitna)—very small
hartija—paper	sitnina—small change
hitan (f. hitna)—urgent	strpljiv—patient
juče—yesterday	svakako—certainly
koštati, koštam—to cost	što brže—as quickly as possible
koverat (<i>gen.</i> koverta)— envelope	tačno—exactly, punctually
lak—easy, light	treba—it is necessary
list—sheet (of paper), leaf	unutrašnjost—interior
molim, molim vas—please	zaboga!—heavens!

Read and translate :

U pošti

Molim vas, gospođice, dajte mi jednu marku za pismo i jednu za dopisnicu.

Za inostranstvo ili za unutrašnjost ?

Ovo pismo je za inostranstvo a dopisnica za unutrašnjost.

Hoćete li poslati svoje pismo običnom ili avionskom poštom ?

Koliko dana putuju pisma do Engleske ?

Ne znam tačno, gospodine, ali je svakako brže avionom.

Avionskom poštom dakle, molim vas, jer je hitno. Šta mislite, treba li da pošaljem pismo preporučeno ?

Ne, nije potrebno ako nije naročito važno. Evo vaših maraka : ovo je marka za vaše pismo, gospodine, a ovo je za vašu dopisnicu.

Hvala. Koliko koštaju ? Na žalost nemam sitnog novca.

Ništa ne mari. Ja imam dosta sitnine.

Translate : I'm going to the post office ; I can take your postcards if you wish. What do you think, is it better for me to send (better that I send) my letters by air mail, and registered ? They're particularly important, and I want them to arrive (want that they arrive) as quickly as possible. Don't you think that young girl (*gospođica*) in the post office is very kind and polite ? She told me (*mi*)¹ in Serbo-Croat, very patiently, how many days it takes for letters (how many days letters travel) to England by ordinary post and by air mail when I bought these stamps there yesterday ; she speaks very clearly and I easily understood when she said how much my stamps cost. Heavens ! I'd forgotten that I must write to my solicitor. Please give me my pen and a sheet of paper and an envelope.

¹ The order of words is : Ona mi je . . .

LESSON IX

THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB

Most verbs in Serbo-Croat, as in other Slavonic languages, have two forms, or 'aspects': perfective (pf.) and imperfective (ipf.). The perfective aspect is used when the action expressed by the verb is limited in duration, or when the verb denotes a completed action—whether this completion is actual or foreseen. The imperative 'Drink up your tea' suggests that the action of drinking is to be completed; therefore 'drink up' corresponds to a Serbo-Croatian perfective verb; similarly the uses of the verb 'learn' in the following: 'I've learned these words,' 'I'll learn these words,' 'I'd learn these words if I were you,' suggest a completed action, and a Serbo-Croatian perfective verb would be used in these sentences.

The imperfective aspect is used to express actions which are continuous, or repeated,¹ or whose completion is not stated or foreseen. 'Drink your tea' does not necessarily mean that the whole of the tea is to be drunk, but that the person addressed is to drink an unspecified quantity, for an unspecified length of time. The verb 'drink' must here, therefore, be an imperfective verb. Similarly the verb in the sentence 'I've studied these words' does not imply a completed action; 'studied' would therefore be an imperfective verb, where the verb 'learned' was perfective. But 'I've been learning these words' again suggests an incompleted action, and an imperfective verb must be used to express 'been learning'. It follows that the compound past tense (Lesson VII) may correspond to different English past tenses, according to which aspect of verbs is used. (It will be realised that an apparent deficiency of other tenses is compensated for in the same way.)

¹ Except after adverbs meaning 'whenever', 'each (every) time that', when a perfective verb is generally used.

As an example, *piti* is an imperfective verb, meaning not only 'to drink' but 'to be drinking'; the corresponding perfective verb is *popiti*—to drink up. 'Pio sam čaj' means, therefore, 'I was drinking (the) tea'; 'popio sam šolju čaja' means 'I drank (the whole of) a cup of tea'.

The imperfective aspect must be used when the verb of a simple sentence or of a principal clause is in the present tense.¹ The reason for this will be understood when it is realised that these verbs, in English, always have either a continuous or a frequentative sense: he's writing; he writes (e.g. for a living)—*on piše* (from *pisati*, pres. *pišem*, ipf.).²

But the present tense of a perfective verb may be used in subordinate clauses: I asked (requested) my son to write (that he *writes*) a letter: *Zamolio sam svoga sina da napiše pismo*. *Napisati*, pres. *napišem*, is the perfective verb corresponding to the imperfective *pisati*, *pišem*.

The perfective and imperfective aspects of the verbs given as examples so far in this lesson have been similar in formation: the prefixes *po* and *na* have changed the imperfective verbs *piti* and *pisati* respectively into perfective verbs. There are many other prefixes having the same function. They are known as 'prepositional' prefixes: most of them have the same form as corresponding prepositions, and they often add the meaning of the preposition to that of the verb to which they are prefixed, e.g. *upiti* means 'to drink in, to absorb'.

When a verb has one simple form (i.e. without a prepositional prefix) and a corresponding form with a prepositional prefix, as in the examples already given, the former will always be imperfective and the latter perfective.

¹ In narrative writers frequently use the present tense (the 'historic present') for describing events which have taken place in the past. The aspects of the verbs used are then the same as they would be if the writer were using the past tense.

² For this reason only imperfective verbs were given in Lesson II.

Other examples are :

učiti, učim (ipf.)—to study, to be learning ; **naučiti** (pf.)—to learn.

pitati, pitam (ipf.) ; **zapatati** (pf.)—to ask.

moliti, molim (ipf.) **zamoliti** (pf.)—to request, beg, pray.

The endings of the present tense will be the same in both aspects of these verbs.

Some verbs have two simple forms, one perfective and one imperfective. Notice that when verbs exist in such pairs they differ both in the infinitive and in the present tense endings, and the verb with the infinitive ending *-ati* is imperfective :

dati, dam (pf.) ; **davati**, dajem (ipf.)—to give.

dignuti, dignem (pf.) ; **dizati**, dižem (ipf.)—to raise.

kupiti, kupim (pf.) ; **kupovati**, kupujem (ipf.)—to buy.

metnuti, metnem (pf.) ; **metati**, mećem (ipf.)—to put.

pustiti, pustim (pf.) ; **puštati**, puštam (ipf.)—to let go, leave.

staviti, stavim (pf.) ; **stavljati**, stavljam (ipf.)—to place.

Both perfective and imperfective forms of most verbs must be learned.

A few verbs, such as *videti*, *vidim*—to see ; *čuti*, *čujem*—to hear, are used both as perfective and imperfective verbs : *da li ste čuli tu reč?*—did you hear that word ? *čujem muziku*—I hear the music.

Reći (*reknem* ; *rekao*, *rekla*)—to say—is perfective : *šta ste rekli?*—what did you say ? *Kazati* (*kažem*)—to say, tell, and *govoriti*—to speak—are imperfective : *šta kažete?*—what are you saying ?

VOCABULARY

bacati , bacam (ipf.) ; (pf.)—to throw	doći , dođem, došao, došla (pf.)—to come
čovjek—man (pl. ljudi)	drug (pl. drugovi)—companion, friend
divan (f. divna)—lovely	

još—still, yet	račun—bill
kući—(to) home ¹	radnja—shop
milicajac (gen. milicajca)— policeman	siromašan (f. siromašna)— poor
ostaviti (pf.); ostavljati, os- tavljam (ipf.)—to leave, abandon	stranica—page of a book
otići, otidem, otišao, otišla (pf.)—to go off, go away	škola—school
otputovati (pf.)—to start on a journey	takav (f. takva)—that sort of, such
parče (gen. parčeta)—piece	ući, uđem, ušao, ušla (pf.)— to enter (with <i>u</i> and acc.)
pitati, pitam (ipf.)—to ask ²	umoran (f. umorna)—tired
pojesti, pojedem, pojeo (pf.)— to eat, eat up	ustati, ustanem (pf.)—to get up
pročitati (pf.)—to read, read to the end	zaspati, zaspim (pf.)—to fall asleep
	zatražiti (pf.)—to ask for

Read and translate: 1. Zašto tako polako pijete čaj? 2. Čovek je brzo popio pivo i zatražio račun. 3. Kad ste kupili taj šešir? 4. Zašto uvek kupujete takve šešire? 5. Da li ste naučili srpskohrvatske reči na ovoj stranici? 6. Na žalost naši mladi studenti uče polako. 7. Dala sam njene stare haljine onoj siromašnoj ženi. 8. Njihovi drugovi su otputovali sinoć. 9. Zašto dajete svome malom detetu čaj? 10. Pojeo je parče hleba sa sirom i otišao u pozorište. 11. Kad smo ušli u njegovu sobu on je gledao kroz prozor. 12. Zamolio sam ga (him) da dodje rano kući. 13. Zapitala je milicajca gde je pošta. 14. Da li ste odmah zaspali? 15. Znam da ste kupili novu kuću. 16. Moji sinovi, moj muž i ja obično ustajemo rano, ali danas smo ustali kasno. 17. Da li ste pročitali ovu

¹ This use of the dative without a preposition, after verbs denoting 'motion towards', is very rare.

² The person asked is in the accusative case.

knjigu ? Ne, još je (it : fem. acc.) čitam. 18. Idete li često u pozorište ? 19. Jovan je juče otišao u školu bez svojih knjiga. 20. Napisao sam mnogo pisama.

Translate : 1. He usually puts his things on the floor, but he has put these important letters in a drawer. 2. I'm studying carefully, but I can't say that I've learned the language. 3. I'm asking you (*vas*) whether you know where my letters are (where are my letters). 4. I have asked the girl whether she knows where the doctor lives. 5. She asked (i.e. requested) her friend to give (that she gives) the driver some money. 6. I'm eating the bread. 7. He didn't eat much. 8. She said : ' Please give me your hat.' 9. I'm leaving these things in my mother's house. 10. Your son left his books in our library. 11. Did you really throw that lovely hat into the river ? 12. He always throws his old things away. 13. Your child is sleeping in my room. 14. We were tired, and soon fell asleep. 15. I don't usually drink, but before luncheon I drank one glass of wine. 16. I've bought the envelopes and now I'm buying stamps. 17. They asked (i.e. requested) Mr. Nikolić to write (that he writes) a book about his travels. 18. Aren't you giving the child any milk ? 19. My wife has gone to a shop to buy (that she buys) a new coat. 20. Are you writing letters ?

LESSON X

**THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB (CONTINUED).
FURTHER NOTES ON ADJECTIVES**

In the previous lesson it was mentioned that prepositional prefixes often add the meaning of the corresponding preposition to that of the verb to which they are prefixed. So *pred* (before), prefixed to *videti* gives *predvideti*—to foresee ; and *pod* (under), changing its form to *pot-*,¹ and prefixed to *pisati*, gives *potpisati*—to sign. Verbs which have acquired a new meaning in this way, and have become perfective in the process, have another (often longer) form for their imperfective aspect with the new meaning. Study the following examples :

- videti* (*vidim*)—to see (a simple verb, ipf.).
- predvideti* (*predvidim*)—to foresee (the simple verb compounded with a prepositional prefix, pf.).
- predvidati* (*predviđam*)—to foresee, to be foreseeing (ipf.).
- pisati* (*pišem*), ipf.—to write.
- potpisati* (*potpišem*), pf.—to sign.
- potpisivati* (*potpisujem*), ipf.—to sign, to be signing.

Notice therefore that a verb is not necessarily perfective if it has a prepositional prefix.

Examples were given at the end of the last lesson of simple verbs which exist in pairs, one perfective and the other imperfective. A prepositional prefix will give a new meaning to both the perfective and the imperfective verbs, without altering their aspects, e.g. :

- dopustiti*, pf. ; *dopuštati*, ipf.—to allow.
- prodati*, pf. ; *prodavati*, ipf.—to sell.
- predstaviti*, pf. ; *predstavljati*, ipf.—to introduce, to present.

¹ See p. 111.

Present tense endings are of course the same as for the simple forms of these verbs.

The student need not fear that he will have to devise these forms himself. This would be impossible. A good dictionary will supply them all, and in both aspects; but an understanding of their formation will be found helpful in understanding their use and meanings. Knowledge of the prepositions will of course often help in understanding the meaning of a verb, though prepositions do not always retain their meanings when prefixed to verbs.

The prefix *za-* often suggests the beginning of an action: *plakati, plačem*—to weep (ipf.); *zaplakati*—to burst into tears (pf.); *pevati, pevam*—to sing (ipf.); *zapevati*—to begin to sing, to burst into song (pf.).

The prefix *po-* usually only serves to render an imperfective verb perfective, e.g. *piti* (ipf.), *popiti* (pf.).

The following verbs should be particularly noted :

sesti (*sednem*; *seo, sela*)—to sit down, pf. If this verb is followed by a preposition which may govern either the accusative or another case according to whether 'motion towards' is implied or not,¹ the preposition will here take the accusative case: *seo je na pod*—he sat down on the floor.

sedeti (*sedim*)—to be sitting, is imperfective, to be used where no motion is implied: *sedeo je na podu* (loc.)—he was sitting (or sat) on the floor.

Similarly, *leći* (*legnem*; *legao, legla*)—to lie down, is perfective: *legao je na krevet* (acc.)—he lay down on the bed. *ležati* (*ležim*)—to lie, to be lying, is imperfective: *ležao je na krevetu* (loc.)—he was lying on the bed.

These verbs, and some other verbs, have also 'frequentative' forms: *sedati* (*sedam*) means 'to keep sitting down', or 'to sit down one after another'; *legati* (*ležem*) means 'to

¹ See pp. 14 and 15.

keep lying down', etc. Prepositions following these verbs will govern the accusative case.

The perfective present of *biti* (to be) is : budem, budeš, bude, budemo, budete, budu. Compare :

rekao mu (to him) je da je poslušan—he told him that he was (is) obedient ; rekao mu je da bude poslušan—he told him to be obedient.

Ići—to go.

Ići is a simple imperfective verb. It has many forms with prepositional prefixes which alter its meaning and its aspect. The imperfective form of these has an entirely different root, e.g. *otići* (from *od ići*)—to go away, to go off (pf.) has imperfective *odlaziti* (*odlazim*).

Most of the compounds of *ići* are in such common use that the student is advised to learn these here :

ići (*idem* ; *išao, išla*), ipf.—to go.

doći (*dođem* ; *došao, došla*), pf.—to come.

dolaziti (*dolazim*), ipf.—to come, to be coming.

izići or izaći (*izidem or izadem* ; *izišao or izašao*, etc.), pf.—to go out. (Followed by the preposition *iz*—out of, and the genitive case.)

izlaziti (*izlazim*), ipf.—to go out, to be going out.

naći (*nađem* ; *našao*, etc.), pf.—to find.

nalaziti, ipf.—to find, to be finding.

otići (*otidem or odem* ; *otišao*, etc.), pf.—to go away.

odlaziti, ipf.—to go away, be going away.

poći (*pođem* ; *pošao*, etc.), pf.—to start off.

polaziti, ipf.—to start off, to be starting off.

preći (*pređem* ; *prešao*, etc.), pf.—to cross over. (Used as a transitive verb, or followed by the preposition *preko*—across, and the genitive case.)

prelaziti, ipf.—to be crossing over.

prići (priđem ; prišao, etc.), pf.—to go up to, to approach.

(Followed by the dative case.)

prilaziti, ipf.—to approach, to be approaching.

proći (prođem ; prošao, etc.), pf.—to pass, to go past. (Used as a transitive verb, or with the preposition *pored*—past, and the genitive case.)

prolaziti, ipf.—to pass, to be passing.

sići (siđem ; sišao, etc.), pf.—to descend. (Often followed by the preposition *sa* and the genitive case.)

silaziti, ipf.—to descend, to be descending.

ući (uđem ; ušao, etc.), pf.—to enter. (Followed by the preposition *u* and the accusative case.)

ulaziti, ipf.—to enter, to be entering.

Do not confuse *poći*—‘ to start off ’ (i.e. when going somewhere) with *početi* (pf., present *počnem* ; ipf. *počinjati*, present *počinjem*), which means ‘ to begin ’ : *pošao sam u jedan sat*—I started (off) at one o’clock (one hour) ; *počeo sam da pišem* (ipf.) *pismo*—I began to write the (or ‘ a ’) letter. (The verb in the clause following ‘ to begin ’ and ‘ to finish ’—*svršiti*, pf. ; *svršavati*, *svršavam*, ipf.—is always imperfective.) Remember that *stići* (*stignem* ; *stigao*, *stigla*), pf.—to arrive, is not a compound of *ići*. Its imperfective form is *stižati*, *stižem*.

Further Notes on Adjectives.

Kakav (fem. *kakva*) means ‘ what sort of ? ’ or ‘ what a ! ’ : *kakva je klima u vašoj zemlji* ?—what is the climate like in your country ? *Kakva klima !*—What a climate !

Ovakav, *takav*, *onakav* (fem. *onakva*, etc.) mean ‘ this sort of ’, ‘ that sort of ’, and ‘ that sort of ’ (referring to something farther away) respectively. Of these, *takav* is the most frequently used : *takav čovek je opasan*—a man like that is dangerous.

Koji ? asks ‘ which ? ’ : *koje dete* ?—which child ?

Sav (fem. *sva*) means 'all', 'the whole': *sav grad je goreo*—the whole town was burning.¹

All these adjectives are declined as definite adjectives. *Sav* has neuter *sve*, genitive (masc. and neut.) *svega*, dat. and loc. *svemu*. The masculine plural *svi* may be used to mean 'everybody': *svi su bili zadovoljni*—everybody was satisfied. The neuter singular *sve* can have the meaning of 'everything': *sve je gotovo*—everything is ready.

Translate: 1. In what sort of car is he travelling? 2. What kind of books do you like? 3. What a man! 4. Why does he always drink that sort of wine? 5. I don't read novels of that kind. 6. With which woman were you talking? 7. Which man did you see? 8. Are they all here? 9. He's finished everything. 10. She writes letters to everybody.

VOCABULARY

Austrija—Austria	kondukter—guard
bife (masc.)—buffet	kupe (masc.)—compartment
carinik—customs officer	kutija—box
čekati (ipf.)—to wait, await	nekoliko—some, a few, several (with gen. pl.)
činnovnik—an official	odgovoriti (pf.), odgovarati (ipf.)—to answer
dok ne ¹ —until	otvoriti (pf.), otvarati (ipf.)—to open
drugi (adj.)—another, other, second	peron—platform
granica—frontier	pogledati (pf.)—to glance
hodnik—corridor	pospan—sleepy
hteti ² (ipf.)—to want, wish	prijatan (fem. prijatna)—pleasant
i . . . i . . . —both . . . and . . .	
jugoslovenski (adj.)—Yugoslav	

¹ *Ceo* (see Lesson XVIII) and *čitav* (fem. *čitava*) also mean 'the whole'.

progovoriti (pf.)—to utter	stanični—belonging to the
red—order, row (u redu—in	station
order, all right)	sve dok ne ¹ —right until
sam (adj.)—alone	tu—there

1. This *ne* combines with verbs which have a negative form, e.g. *dok nemam*—until I have ; *sve dok nisam stigao*—right until I arrived. 2. The present tense of *hteti* is given in the next lesson.

Read and translate : Kad je naš voz prolazio kroz Austriju mogli smo da legnemo. Odmah smo zaspali. Spavali smo sve dok nismo stigli na granicu. Tu smo hteli da izidemo iz voza i da popijemo čašu piva u bifeu na staničnom peronu, ali kondukter je rekao da moramo sedeti u svome kupeu ; kazao je da carinik i drugi činovnici dolaze u voz pre nego što voz pređe granicu. Dakle, seli smo i čekali. Uskoro je došao jedan jugoslovenski činovnik i zatražio naše pasoše. Kada je otišao, moj drug je pogledao u hodnik i rekao : » Dolazi carinik. Moramo reći da imamo ove kutije engleskih cigareta.« Carinik—vrlo učtiv i ljubazan čovek—ušao je u naš kupe, pogledao na naš prtljag, progovorio nekoliko reči na srpskohrvatskom i izišao.

Translate : I talked with the other travellers, but I was very tired for I had already been travelling a long time, and when they got out of the train and I was alone in the compartment I lay down and fell asleep. I slept while the train was passing through Austria, but when we arrived at the Yugoslav frontier the guard came into my compartment. 'The customs officer and other officials are coming,' he said. 'Thank you,' I answered sleepily, and began opening my cases. However, this wasn't necessary. When the customs officer came he only glanced at my luggage, said 'All right', and went out,

although I was just going¹ to say ' I have this large box of cigarettes '. A second Yugoslav came and asked for my passport. He spoke a few words in Serbo-Croat and I understood everything. Both the customs officer and the other official were very agreeable and polite. Although it was night and I was so tired I thought that my journey in Yugoslavia had begun very pleasantly.

1. iako sam već hteo da . . .

LESSON XI

THE FUTURE TENSE

This tense is another compound tense, as in English. It is composed of an auxiliary verb and an infinitive. The auxiliary verb is the present tense of the verb *hteti*. Like the present tense of the verb 'to be' the present tense of *hteti* has both full and short forms.

Full Form

hoću I want (I will, I shall)
 hoćeš
 hoće
 hoćemo
 hoćete
 hoće

The short, enclitic, forms are used only when the verb is used as the auxiliary verb in forming the future tense. They are obtained by dropping the first syllable *ho-*, and (being enclitic) must of course be preceded by another word in a sentence or clause :

Short (Enclitic) Form

ja ću I shall
 ti ćeš
 on, ona, ono će
 mi ćemo
 vi ćete
 oni, one, ona će

The future tense of every verb is therefore formed in the same way :

ja ću imati—	ja ću biti—	ja ću ići—
I shall have	I shall be	I shall go
ti ćeš imati	ti ćeš biti	ti ćeš ići

on, ona, ono će imati	on, ona, ono će biti	ona ona, ono će ići
mi ćemo imati	mi ćemo biti	mi ćemo ići
vi ćete imati	vi ćete biti	vi ćete ići
oni, one, ona će imati	oni, one, ona će biti	oni, one, ona će ići

The above will be the order of the auxiliary verb and the infinitive provided the verb is preceded by some other word : Olga će videti slike—Olga will see the pictures ; sutra ću biti u Zagrebu—tomorrow I shall be in Zagreb ; ovde ćemo čekati—we will wait here (here we will wait).

But if the verb stands at the beginning of the sentence or clause the enclitic auxiliary verb must follow the infinitive ; the infinitive and auxiliary then usually form one word : the *-ti* ending of the infinitive drops, and the enclitic auxiliary is suffixed.

Thus *ja ću biti, ti ćeš biti, etc.*, become :

biću	I shall be
bićeš	
biće	
bićemo	
bićete	
biće	

Similarly *ja ću imati* becomes *imaću* ; *mi ćemo imati* becomes *imaćemo* ; *vi ćete videti* becomes *videćete* ; *oni će govoriti* becomes *govoriće*.¹

When the enclitic auxiliary verb follows the infinitive of verbs like *rasti*—to grow (in which the consonant *s*, instead of a vowel, precedes the *-ti* ending), in order to form the future in this way the following change takes place :

ja ću rasti	becomes	rašću
ti ćeš rasti	„	rašćeš

¹ Sometimes, especially in the *ije*-dialect, these are written *bit ću, imat ću, imat ćemo, videt ćemo, etc.*

on će rasti	becomes	rašće
mi ćemo rasti	„	rašćemo
vi ćete rasti	„	rašćete
oni će rasti	„	rašće

The infinitives of verbs like *ići* (with the ending *-ći*) do not combine with the auxiliary verb when this follows them. The alternative form to *ja ću ići* is therefore *ići ću*.

Exercise: Give the future tense of the following verbs, both with and without the nominative personal pronoun: *putovati*, *jesti*, *doći*, *voleti*.

In the future tense the choice of aspect will depend upon whether or not the action denoted by the verb is foreseen as a limited, completed action:

Sutra ću *pisati* pisma—tomorrow I shall write letters (ipf.).
Sutra ću *napisati* pismo—tomorrow I shall write a letter (pf.).

The negative of the present tense of *hteti* is:

neću	I do not want to ; I shall not
nećeš	
neće	
nećemo	
nećete	
neće	

The negative of the future tense is therefore:

neću biti—I shall not be	neću jesti—I shall not eat	neću ići—I shall not go
nećeš biti	nećeš jesti	nećeš ići
neće biti	neće jesti	neće ići
nećemo biti	nećemo jesti	nećemo ići
nećete biti	nećete jesti	nećete ići
neće biti	neće jesti	neće ići

As negative auxiliary verbs are not enclitic it will never be

necessary to reverse the order of the infinitive and the auxiliary verb in the negative.

When *neću* etc. are followed by the conjunction *da* and the present tense of a verb, the sense is rather 'I do not want to', e.g. *neću da idem*—I don't want to go.

The interrogative of the future tense is formed in the same way as that of the compound past tense : if there is not already an interrogative word in the sentence either the question may be introduced by *da li*, in which case the short form of the auxiliary verb will be used ; or the full form of the auxiliary verb may be followed by the interrogative particle *li* :

Da li će doći ? or Hoće li doći ?—will he come ?

Da li ćete putovati avionom ? or Hoćete li putovati avionom ?—will you travel by aeroplane ?

The negative interrogative, like other 'surprise' questions (see Lesson VII), is usually introduced by *zar* : *zar nećete pušiti ?*—won't you really smoke ? ; *zar neće doći ?*—won't he come ?

Exercise : Give the negative, and negative interrogative, of the future tense of the following verbs : *videti*, *rasti*, *moći*, *prekinuti* (to interrupt).

Remember in reported speech to use the tense which the speaker actually used (Lesson VII) : she said that she would come (she said : 'I will come')—*rekla je da će doći* ; we promised we would be there (we promised : 'We shall be there')—*Obećali smo da ćemo biti tamo*. Note that the conjunction 'that', which is often omitted in English, cannot be omitted in Serbo-Croat.

VOCABULARY

bašta—garden

članak (gen. *članka*)—article
(e.g. in newspaper)

dockan (adverb)—late

docnije—later

doručak (gen. *doručka*)—
breakfast

gladan (f. *gladna*)—hungry

imenik—directory	podne (neut. indeclinable)— noon
izabrati, izaberem (pf.)—to choose	posetiti (pf.)—to visit
jabuka—apple tree	posle—after (with gen.)
jelovnik—menu	posle (adverb)—afterwards
molim vas—please (I pray you)	povrće (neut.)—vegetables
možda—perhaps	prenočiti (pf.)—to spend the night
na vreme—in time, punctu- ally	prvo—firstly
obećati, obećam (pf.)—to promise	siguran (f. sigurna)—sure, certain
očekivati, očekujem (ipf.)— to expect	sladoled—ice cream
onda—then	telefonirati (pf. and ipf.)—to telephone
paket—packet	telefonski (adj.)—telephone
planina—mountain	večeras—this evening
po—on, about (with loc.)	voće (neut.)—fruit
pod—under ¹	zadatak (gen. zadatka)—task
	završiti (pf.)—to finish

1. This preposition, like the prepositions *među*—among, *nad*—over, and *pred*—in front of, may be followed by the accusative or instrumental cases, according to whether motion towards, or position, is indicated: metnuo sam pismo među knjige (acc.)—I put the letter among the books; but: pismo je među knjigama (instr.)—the letter is among the books.

Read and translate: 1. Kad će poći voz za Beograd? Poći će odmah. 2. Jovan je obećao da će doći kući posle ručka. 3. Da li ćemo morati prenočiti u Ljubljani? 4. Ona će sedeti u njihovoj lepoj bašti i čitati ove knjige. 5. Dete će popiti veliku šolju mleka pre nego što zaspi. 6. Večeras nećemo ići u pozorište: bićemo suviše umorni. 7. Da li ćete posetiti gospođu Petrović pre nego što odete u bioskop? 8. Sutra ćemo telefonirati starom profesoru. 9. Zar ti studenti neće

biti na predavanju gospodina Petrovića ? Biće vrlo zanimljivo. 10. Pročitaću ova važna pisma pre nego što legnem. 11. Zar nećete otići na stanicu da pitate kad polazi voz ? 12. Neću zaspati dok ne završim ovaj zadatak. 13. Očekivao sam da će lekar stići na vreme, ali nije. 14. Putovaćemo noću, a spavaćemo danju. 15. Gde ćete sesti ? Blizu prozora ili blizu ormara ? 16. Proći ćemo pored vaše kuće posle podne ; da li ćete biti na prozoru ? 17. Izići ćemo iz voza kad stignemo na stanicu. 18. Hoćete li napisati dopisnu kartu mome sinu ? 19. Ja ću metnuti svoje stvari pod vaše. 20. Već je dockan : kada ćemo večerati ?

Translate : 1. When shall we arrive in Zagreb ? 2. I won't read my letters before breakfast. 3. He'll be sitting under the big apple tree in our garden this afternoon. 4. We'll put this telephone directory under these other big books. 5. Please will you post this little package when you go to (*na*) the post ? 6. When will they come out of the cinema ? Do they usually come out late ? 7. He'll eat up that ice cream. 8. Will the travellers see those beautiful lakes and mountains as they pass through Slovenia, or do they travel by night ? 9. Will this be a good book for their son ? 10. This train will soon start ; it usually starts punctually. 11. Won't the soldiers be able to sleep here ? 12. Will you give these things to your sister, please ? 13. We shan't get out of the train : the Yugoslav officials will come into our compartment. 14. Won't your students go to (*na*) that lecture ? 15. Will the professor write an article about the book which (*koju*) he has been reading ?

VOCABULARY ·

dobiti, dobijem (pf.)—to get, win, earn	izvući, izvučem ; izvukao, izvukla (pf.)—to pull out
ispod—under, from under (with gen.)	kovčeg—chest, trunk navečer—in the evening

nepoznat—unknown	prvi—first
ostaviti (pf.)—to leave, abandon	put—road, journey
pešice <i>or</i> peške—on foot	staza—path
postelja—bed	strpati (ipf.)—to cram
	supa—soup

Read and translate the following passage, an extract (adapted) from a short story in the *ije*-dialect by the Croatian writer Milan Begović (1876–1948). It is continued at the end of the next lesson.

Kad je došla kući, Jeca je ušla u svoju sobu, izvukla ispod postelje kovčeg i na brzu ruku¹ strpala u kovčeg ono malo stvari² što (which) su bile njezine. Sve što je dobila od gospođe Lucije ostavila je u ormaru. Onda je otišla na stanicu da pita kad polazi prvi voz za Drniš. Ona će ići kući, svakako će ići. Putovat će preko Drniša. Stići će navečer u Drniš, gdje³ će morati prenoćiti, jer neće moći da ide pješice⁴ preko planine, po nepoznatim stazama.

1. na brzu ruku—hastily. 2. Literally: 'that little (few) of things', i.e. 'those few things'. 3. *gde* in the *e*-dialect. 4. *pešice* in the *e*-dialect.

Translate: Are you hungry? We'll go into this little restaurant. My husband said that he would be here; perhaps he'll come later. Where shall we sit? Will you sit on this chair? I'll put this big bag under my chair: is that all right? Here's the menu; what will you choose? I'm sure you'll be able to eat plenty of meat and vegetables after your long journey; but first we'll take soup; we'll think about (*na*, with acc.) fruit and cheese afterwards—the cheese is probably good here. We've plenty of time. Afterwards we won't go on foot; we'll take a taxi and go to the theatre.

LESSON XII

PERSONAL PRONOUNS. WORD ORDER

DECLENSION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS

		Singular				
		1st	2nd	3rd person		
		person	person	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	ja	ti	on	ona	ono	
Gen.	mene, me	tebe, te	njega, ga	nje, je	njega, ga	
Dat.	meni, mi	tebi, ti	njemu, mu	njoj, joj	njemu, mu	
Acc.	mene, me	tebe, te	njega, ga	nju, ju, je	njega, ga	
Voc.	—	ti	—	—	—	
Instr.	mnom	tobom	njim(e)	njom	njim	
Loc.	meni	tebi	njemu	njoj	njemu	
		Plural				
Nom.	mi	vi	oni	one	ona	
Gen.	nas	vas		njih, ih		
Dat.	nama, nam	vama, vam		njima, im		
Acc.	nas	vas		njih, ih		
Voc.	—	vi		—		
Instr.	nama	vama		njima		
Loc.	nama	vama		njima		

The genitive, dative, and accusative cases of these pronouns each have two forms (the feminine accusative singular has three). These are their full and their short, enclitic, forms. The difference between these forms in the genitive and accusative plural of the first and second person (*nas* and *vas*) is not

shown in printing : the vowel of their full form is long, and that of their short form short.

The full forms must be used when the pronoun stands at the beginning of a sentence or clause, or if it is emphasised, e.g. I'll give this book to you, for I don't give my books to him—*Vama ću dati ovu knjigu* (or *Daću vama ovu knjigu*), *jer ne dajem svoje knjige njemu*.

The full forms are also used after prepositions : ¹ *blizu mene*—near me ; *na njemu*—on him ; *u njima*—in them.

With these exceptions the form of the personal pronoun to be used is always the short, enclitic form. The feminine accusative singular has two short forms : *ju* and *je*. Of these, *ju* is used only when this pronoun immediately precedes the verb *je* ; otherwise the form *je* is always used.

WORD ORDER

In the passages and sentences given so far in this book the order of words will have been seen to be much the same as in English, except for the rule that an enclitic verb or pronoun cannot stand at the beginning of a sentence or clause. Generally speaking there is greater flexibility of word order in Serbo-Croat than in English ; owing to the fact that the cases have special forms the meaning of a sentence will be clear whatever the order of the words, whereas in English it would be impossible to reverse the positions of the subject and object of a sentence such as ' the dog bit the man '.

But there are definite rules regarding the position of enclitic pronouns and enclitic verbs. The student is recommended to learn by heart the examples given below rather than to try to memorise the rules, and to refer frequently to this section.

¹ Occasionally the stress accent may be placed on the preposition and the enclitic form of the pronoun used ; then the preposition is sometimes lengthened, e.g. *pred* (in front of) becomes *preda*. Also ' on to him ', usually *na njega*, may be written *na nj*.

THE POSITION OF THE ENCLITIC PRONOUN

When the enclitic pronoun is the direct or indirect object of a verb which is *not* an enclitic verb, the enclitic pronoun precedes the verb :

Ja ga vidim—I see him.

Sada ga vidim—Now I see him.

But if no other word precedes this pronoun in the sentence or clause the enclitic pronoun must follow the verb :

Vidim ga—I see him.

When there is more than one enclitic pronoun in the sentence or clause the pronoun in the accusative case always follows the pronouns in other cases :

Ja mu ga dajem—I'm giving it to him (I to-him it am-giving).

or Dajem mu ga.

When the verb is negative the negative particle *ne* always immediately precedes the verb :

Ja ga ne vidim—I don't see him.

or Ne vidim ga.

Ja mu ga ne dajem—I'm not giving it to him.

or Ne dajem mu ga.

Negative forms of auxiliary verbs, as mentioned earlier, are not enclitic verbs, so the rules given above apply also when the negative forms of auxiliary verbs are used :

Ja ga nisam video—I didn't see him.

or Nisam ga video.

Ja mu ga neću dati—I shall not give it to him.

or Neću mu ga dati.

Exercise : Translate each of the following sentences with and without the nominative personal pronoun, and using only enclitic pronouns in the other cases : I like him ; I don't like him ; he likes her ; he didn't like her ; she's giving it to me ;

she's not giving it to you ; she did not give it to him ; I'm giving it to her.

Put the above sentences into the plural.

THE POSITION OF THE ENCLITIC VERB

The principal rules to observe are :

1. The enclitic verb can never stand at the beginning of a sentence or clause.

2. In a subordinate clause the enclitic verb must immediately follow a conjunction or relative pronoun introducing the clause, except when the conjunction is *i* (and) or *a* (and or but). The conjunction in most frequent use is *da* (that), and the student is advised always to pause after using this conjunction and ask himself whether there will be an enclitic verb in the clause following it.

Znam da je vaša sestra ovde—I know that your sister is here.

Mislimo da su kuće bile blizu crkve—We think that the houses were near the church.

Da li verujete ¹ da će vaš drug doći ?—Do you believe that your friend will come ?

(But : Znam da vaša sestra nije ovde ; mislimo da kuće nisu bile blizu crkve ; da li verujete da vaš drug neće doći ?—because the negative forms of auxiliary verbs are not enclitic.)

Exercise : Translate—I think that the house is (was) here ; we know that the doctor will (will not) come ; he believes that his friend is (is not) in the train ; I know that your book is (was) on the table ; they say that their sister is (was) in the kitchen.

THE POSITION OF THE ENCLITIC PRONOUN IN RELATION TO THE ENCLITIC VERB.

When an enclitic pronoun is the direct or indirect object of a verb in a compound tense in which there is an enclitic

¹ From *verovati*—to believe.

auxiliary verb the pronoun immediately follows the auxiliary verb, except when the verb is *je*. Enclitic pronouns precede the verb *je*.

Ja sam ga video juče—I saw him yesterday.

or Video sam ga juče.

or Juče sam ga video.

Mi ćemo vam pisati sutra—We shall write to you tomorrow.

or Pisaćemo vam sutra.

or Sutra ćemo vam pisati.

On će mi ga dati—He will give it to me.

or Daće mi ga.

But : On me je video jutros—He saw me this morning.

or Video me je jutros.

or Jutros me je video.

Note that as the enclitic pronoun precedes the verb *je* this verb, although enclitic, will not always immediately follow a preceding conjunction : Znam da me je Jovan video—I know that John saw me.

VOCABULARY

dočekati (pf.)—to wait for
(until the expected person
comes)

doneti, donesem (pf.)—to
bring

kafa—coffee

karta—ticket

kuda—whither

obećati, obećam (pf.)—to
promise (used with dative
of person)

pas (gen. psa)—dog

povesti, povedem (pf.)—to
take, lead (a person)

pozvati, pozovem (pf.)—to
invite

ponuditi (pf.)—to offer

rečnik—dictionary

slobodan, slobodna—free, at
liberty

večera—supper, dinner

voditi (ipf.)—to take, lead (a
person)

zahvaliti (pf.)—to thank (used
with dative of person)

Read and translate : 1. Nećemo je videti sutra. 2. Mi ga nismo čuli kad je ulazio u kuću. 3. Ja sam je gledao ali me ona nije primetila. 4. Našli smo ih u parku i zamolila sam ih da dodju sutra. 5. Sada ću otići da ga tražim. 6. Juče mi je rekao da će ići u pozorište sa mnom. 7. Mi ih nećemo pozvati na ručak. 8. Da li mu je rekla da ju je njegov drug pozvao na večeru ? 9. Mi ćemo vas dočekati na stanici. 10. On joj je dao svoju adresu. 11. Ona mi je obećala da će biti poslušna. 12. Doneo je stolice za njih i za mene. 13. Da li su vas razumeli kad ste govorili srpskohrvatski ? 14. Daćemo im ove rečnike kad ih vidimo. 15. Oni nisu bili kod mene kad ste ih tražili.

Translate : 1. I went to look for him but I didn't find him. 2. She sang a lovely song : did you hear it ? 3. He told me that he wouldn't come. 4. We thanked them when they invited us to luncheon, but told them we should not be free. 5. I'll give him her address ; she said she would give it to me. 6. He offered her a cigarette but she didn't take it. 7. I was looking at his pockets ; there are (*ima*) a lot of things in them. 8. There's your coat : I put it on the chair. 9. They promised us at ' Putnik ' ¹ that they would give us the tickets tomorrow. 10. My dog won't go with him, but perhaps he'll go with you. 11. She wants to take us with her (so *sobom*). 12. I didn't understand him when he was talking with them. 13. Are you really giving this to *me* ? 14. To me it's not clear why they didn't write to him. 15. They said they'd wait for us at the station, but I don't see them.

VOCABULARY

danas—today	odlučiti (pf.)—to decide
galama—noise, hubbub	otvoriti (pf.)—to open
muzej—museum	potreban, (f. potrebna)—
naglas—aloud	necessary

¹. ' Putnik '—the Yugoslav travel agency.

probuditi (pf.)—to awaken	sunce—sun
sijati (ipf.)—to shine	ustati, ustanem (pf.)—to get up
spremati (ipf.), spremiti (pf.)—to prepare	vodić—guide book

Translate : The noise in the street awoke us early, and we got up immediately. ' I'll prepare the coffee,' John said to me. ' Where have you put it ? ' ' I think that I put all the necessary things in your case. Didn't you see them when you opened it last night ? Here they are ! While you prepare it we'll decide where (whither) we will go today. Have you the guide book ? Give it to me, please. Thank you. Here's a picture of that beautiful church ; we saw it yesterday, you know, when we were passing. Perhaps we shall be able to go into it today. We must go to this museum, too.' ¹ I read about it aloud while John was preparing the coffee. ' We must visit it this afternoon,' ² I said to him. He passed me a cup. ' Oh, this is very pleasant ! The sun's shining and the coffee is good. We'll drink it up and go out to see the town.'

1. Use *i* (and, too) before the phrase ' to this museum '.
2. Say ' after noon '.

VOCABULARY

čim—as soon as	odavna, odavno—for a long time past
izleteti, izletim (pf.)—to fly out	polazak (gen. polaska)—de- parture
krenuti, krenem (pf.)—to start off	policija—police
mariti za (ipf., with acc.)— to care about	poludeti, poludim (pf.)—to go mad
mísao (f. ; gen. sing. misli, nom. pl. misli, like <i>stvar</i>)— thought	pre (with gen.)—before prema (with loc.)—towards prizemlje—ground floor

smeti, smem (ipf.)—to dare, to be allowed	vikati, vičem (ipf.)—to shout za (with instr.)—after, follow- ing after
svejedno—‘ all one ’ (i.e. ‘ it doesn’t matter ’)	želja—wish, desire
trčati, trčim (ipf.)—to run	

This passage, for reading and translation, is a continuation of the passage in the *ije*-dialect given in the previous lesson. The forms of words which differ in the *e*-dialect are given in brackets in the notes below.

Poslije¹ podne, malo prije² polaska voza, Jeca je uzela kovčeg. Našla je Luciju u prizemlju i rekla joj :

— Ja idem kući.

— Ti si poludjela !³ A moje dijete ?⁴

— Svejedno. I moje⁵ čeka⁶ na me odavna.

— Ti ne smiješ⁷ ići — vikala je Lucija. — Poslat ću za tobom policiju. Ja te ne puštam !

Ali Jeca je izletjela⁸ iz kuće i trčala prema stanici.

Čim je sjela⁹ u vagon, voz je krenuo. S njom su putovali drugi putnici, ali ona nije marila za njih. Živjela¹⁰ je u njoj samo jedna misao i želja : da stigne što prije¹¹ tamo, gdje¹² je njen Jovo.

1. (posle). 2. (pre). 3. (poludela). 4. (dete). 5. i moje—
‘ mine, too ’. 6. Translate ‘ has been waiting ’. The present
tense is used because the action is still continuing. 7. (smeš).
8. (izletela). 9. (sela). 10. (živela). 11. što prije (što pre)—
as soon as possible. 12. (gde).

LESSON XIII

THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN. REFLEXIVE VERBS

The reflexive pronoun is the same for every person, singular and plural, and therefore corresponds to all English reflexive pronouns—myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves. It is declined :

Gen.	sebe
Dat.	sebi, si
Acc.	sebe, se
Instr.	sobom
Loc.	sebi

The rules for the use of the full and enclitic forms of the personal pronouns apply to the accusative forms *sebe* and *se* of this pronoun.

When in English a personal pronoun in one of the above cases refers to the same person as the subject of the sentence the reflexive pronoun should be used in Serbo-Croat. Compare : ‘ I am taking him with me ’—Vodim ga sa sobom (i.e. ‘ with myself ’), and ‘ Will you come with me ? ’—Hoćete li doći sa mnom ?

As the reflexive pronoun *se* is an enclitic pronoun like other short forms of personal pronouns, in the accusative case its place in the sentence will be determined accordingly :

Ona se **umiva**—She’s washing herself.

or **Umiva se**.

Vi ćete se **izgubiti**—You’ll lose yourself.

or **Izgubićete se**. (‘ **Izgubiti se** ’ also means ‘ to disappear ’.)

In the 3rd person singular of the compound past tense the auxiliary verb *je* is often omitted after *se* :

On se je **ubio**—He killed himself.

or On se **ubio**.

or **Ubio se**.

Do not confuse this reflexive pronoun with the *adjective* 'myself', 'himself', etc., which is *sam, sama*, etc. (The vowel is longer than in the verb *sam*.) She saw them herself (i.e. 'she herself saw them')—*videla ih je sama*. This adjective also means 'alone' (see p. 60).

Exercise : Translate with and without nominative personal pronouns : I am (was) washing myself ; he is (was) washing himself ; I lost myself ; she lost herself ; I ask myself (i.e. I wonder) ; he asked himself ; he asked her (acc.) himself.

Translate the above sentences also in the plural.

Many verbs which are not reflexive in English are reflexive in Serbo-Croat. The verb 'to return', for example, is always transitive in Serbo-Croat, and where it would be used intransitively in English the reflexive pronoun must be expressed as its object in Serbo-Croat :

Moj sin će vam vratiti vašu knjigu—My son will return your book to you.

Moj sin će se vratiti sutra—My son will return tomorrow (i.e. . . . will bring himself back).

The reason for the use of the reflexive pronoun with some other verbs is not usually so obvious, e.g. *bojati se, bojim se* (ipf.)—to fear ; *sećati se, sećam se* (ipf.), *setiti se, setim se* (pf.)—to remember. The noun or pronoun following these verbs is in the genitive case :

Bojim se učitelja—I'm afraid of the teacher.

Bojali ste se kiše—You were afraid of the rain.

Sećam se onih dana—I remember those days.

*Smejati se, smejem se*¹ (ipf.)—to laugh, and *smešiti se, smešim se* (ipf.)—to smile, are also reflexive verbs :

¹ This verb, like verbs meaning 'to ridicule', is followed by the dative case when it means 'to laugh at'.

On se smeje—He's laughing.

or Smeje se.

Zašto se smešite?—Why are you smiling?

The verbs *diviti se*, *divim se* (ipf.)—to admire, and *čuditi se*, *čudim se* (ipf.)—to wonder at, take the dative case :

Divim se vašoj hrabrosti—I admire your courage.

The verbs *dogoditi se* and *desiti se* (pf.), *dogadati se* and *dešavati se* (ipf.) mean 'to happen' and are, of course, used only in the 3rd person :

Ovo se dešava svaki dan—This happens every (each) day.

Kad se (je) to dogodilo?—When did that happen?

Other reflexive verbs will be found in the lists in the Appendix.

Verbs are often used reflexively in Serbo-Croat where in English the passive voice would be used :

Naslov se piše ovde—The title is written here (The title writes itself here).

Ove pesme su se pevale u Dalmaciji—These songs were sung in Dalmatia (These songs sang themselves . . .).

The reflexive pronoun may also mean 'each other' :

Da li su se videli?—Did they see each other?

VOCABULARY

glumac (gen. glumca)—actor	naljutiti se (pf.)—to get angry
glumica—actress	niz, niza (with acc.)—down
kako—how	obala—coast, shore
komedija—comedy	obradovati se, obradujem se (pf.) ¹ —to be delighted
kupati (se) (ipf.)—to bathe	penjati se, penjem se (ipf.)—to climb
lice—face	
nadati se (ipf.)—to hope	
najzad—at last	

¹ Followed by *što* ('that').

poneti, ponesem (pf.)—to bring, fetch	strog—stern, severe
popeti se, popnem se (pf.)— to climb	šala—joke, jest
potrčati, potrčim (pf.)—to run off	šuma—forest, wood
pozdraviti (pf.)—to greet	taman, tamna—dark
prekjuče—the day before yesterday	toliko—so much
prevariti (pf.)—to deceive	uvideti, uvidim (pf.)—to realise
prevariti se—to make a mis- take	uz (with acc.)—up, alongside, along with
radovati se, radujem se (ipf.) ¹ —to rejoice, be delighted	viđati (ipf.)—to see some- times, frequently, regularly
roditelj—parent	zato što—because
sastati se, sastanem se (pf.)— to meet	zaustaviti (pf.)—to stop, bring to a halt
skočiti (pf.)—to jump	zbog (with gen.)—because of
starica—old woman	zemlja—earth, ground ; country
	zgrada—building
	zid (pl. zidovi)—wall
	zvati, zovem (ipf.)—to call

Read and translate : 1. Oni se ne sećaju vaših roditelja. 2. Englezi se nisu smejali ovoj šali, jer je nisu razumeli. 3. Sebi je ostavio vrlo veliki komad mesa. 4. Nadam se da se ona starica neće naljutiti na mene. 5. Naš prijatelj gospodin Petrović nije kupio kuću za sebe nego za svoju sestru. 6. Pitam se da li sam se prevarila. 7. To se nije desilo juče ; desilo se prekjuče. 8. Zar niste mogli da se vratite na vreme ? 9. Jovan se umivao dok se njegov otac kupao. 10. Mladići su najzad uvideli da su se izgubili u šumi. 11. Pozdravili su se kad su se sastali. 12. Piše ovde da se ne sme ući u ovu zgradu. 13. Kaže se (it is said) da je i majka onoga glumca bila velika glumica. 14. Penjali su se uz onaj zid kad sam ih video.

¹ Followed by *što* (' that ').

15. Putnici su poneli sve svoje stvari sa sobom. 16. Radujem se što ste došli. 17. Odmah smo se zaustavili. 18. Kako se zove ono selo koje (which) se nalazi ('is situated') blizu šume? 19. Moj sin se bojava vašeg velikog psa, gospodine. 20. Ja se nisam mogao setiti njegovog imena.

Translate: 1. Mila has disappeared. 2. I don't know whether she will come back. 3. I hope they'll take me with them. 4. Why were you laughing? 5. I wasn't laughing; I was only smiling. 6. She's naturally afraid of him because of his stern face. 7. 'Wine (gen.), Mila!' they shouted when Mila was serving in the café. 8. Do you remember the night when we got lost in that dark forest? 9. I've bought this picture for myself, because I admired it so much. 10. Fortunately that doesn't often happen. 11. As soon as she had read his letters she returned them to me. 12. It happened when we were at your home.¹ 13. A comedy by (od) Marin Držić is being given (is giving itself) at the theatre; we must see it. 14. What do they say (what is said) about this book? 15. They didn't see each other often, although they liked each other (very) much. 16. The car stopped in front of a large building and the driver got out. 17. He climbed up the wall, jumped on to the ground, and ran off along the path.² 18. Our little village is situated ('finds itself') on the coast. 19. What is your name?³ 20. I was delighted when I received the good news about you.

1. Use *kod* with the genitive of the personal pronoun 'you'. 2. 'along the path': use the instrumental case, without a preposition. 3. Say: How (*kako*) do you call yourself?

VOCABULARY

al' : ali—but

Ana—Anna

berberin—barber

jedva—scarcely

kafanski—belonging to the

café

kao da—as if, as though	pa—and so, and then
ministarstvo—ministry	slatko—sweetly
momak (gen. momka)—lad	služiti (ipf.)—to serve
natrag—back, in reverse	srce—heart
direction	sutradan—the next day
neko—somebody	točiti (ipf.)—to pour out
nositi (ipf.)—to carry	(wine, etc.)
obrijati, obrijem (pf.)—to	tuđ—somebody else's, foreign
shave	tužiti za (ipf. ; with instr.)—
obući, obučem ; obukao,	to grieve for
obukla (pf.)—to put on	tvrd—firmly, soundly
(clothes)	učiniti se (pf.)—to seem
okrenuti, okrenem (pf.)—to	uputiti (pf.)—to direct
turn	vući, vučem ; vukao, vukla
oriti se (ipf.)—to resound	(ipf.)—to pull, draw
ošišati (pf.)—to cut (hair)	

Translate and learn by heart the following verse from a poem by the Serbian poet Đura Jakšić (1832–78) :

Vina, Milo ! orilo se
 Dok je Mila ovde bila.
 Sad se Mila izgubila —
 Tuđe ruke vino nose.
 Ana toči
 Ana služi
 Al' za Milom srce tuži.

Read and translate the following passage from a short story by the Serbian humourist and dramatist Branislav Nušić. (1864–1938). It is continued in Lessons XV and XVII.

Tu noć, u kafani, Petronije je vrlo slatko i vrlo tvrdo spavao. A sutradan probudio se pre nego što su se probudili kafanski

momci i jedva je čekao da se otvore vrata. Otišao je zatim kod berberina, ošišao se, obrijao se, obukao crni kaput i uputio se Terazijama ¹ u ministarstvo. Kad je došao do ministarstva učinilo mu se kao da ga neko vuče za (by) kaput natrag, pa se okrenuo da vidi ko je to.

¹ Terazije (f. pl.)—a street in Belgrade.

LESSON XIV

CARDINAL NUMERALS

1	jedan, jedna, jedno	21	dvadeset i jedan (jedna, jedno)
2	dva, dve, dva	22	dvadeset i dva (dve, dva)
3	tri	23	dvadeset i tri
4	četiri	30	trideset
5	pet	31	trideset i jedan, etc.
6	šest	40	četrdeset
7	sedam	50	pedeset
8	osam	60	šezdeset
9	devet	70	sedamdeset
10	deset	80	osamdeset
11	jedanaest ¹	90	devedeset
12	dvanaest	100	sto <i>or</i> stotina
13	trinaest	101	sto jedan, etc.
14	četрнаest	200	dvesta <i>or</i> dve stotine
15	petnaest	300	trista <i>or</i> tri stotine
16	šesnaest	400	četiri stotine
17	sedamnaest	500	pet stotina
18	osamnaest	600	šest stotina, etc.
19	devetnaest	1,000	hiljada <i>or</i> tisuća
20	dvadeset	2,000	dve hiljade, etc.

The numeral 'one'—*jedan, jedna, jedno*, is declined as a definite adjective, agreeing with the noun following it: *imam jednog sina*—I have one son (note again the endings of adjective and noun when the noun denotes a masculine living creature); *našla je samo jedan dućan*—she found only one shop; *u jednoj kući*—in one house; *na jednom mestu*—at one place. This numeral has also plural forms, to be used with the few nouns which have only plural forms in common use, such as *novine* (f. pl.)—newspaper,² *vrata* (n. pl.)—door, *kola*

¹ This is a contraction of *jedan na deset* (one on to ten).

² Another word for 'newspaper' is *list* (masc. sing.), pl. *listovi*.

(n. pl.)—cart, car ; and some parts of the body, e.g. grudi
(f. pl.)—chest, leđa (n. pl.)—back.

Jedne novine—one newspaper ; u jednim novinama—in
one newspaper ; jedna vrata su otvorena—one door is open.

It has already been mentioned (Lesson III) that the numeral *jedan, jedna, jedno* is sometimes used where the indefinite article is used in English. According to the context, 'jedna žena je pevala' might mean 'a woman was singing' or 'one woman was singing'.

Unless it is one of those nouns used only in their plural form, the noun following the numerals 21, 31, 41, etc., is always in the singular : 41 guests—četrdeset i jedan gost ; to 21 women—dvadeset i jednoj ženi ; in 31 villages—u trideset i jednom selu.

The noun following the cardinal numerals 2, 3, 4 ; 22, 23, 24 ; 32, 33, 34, etc., is always in the genitive singular : tri sina—three sons ; dvadeset i četiri žene—24 women ; trideset i dva pisma—32 letters. Note that the numeral 2 has masculine, feminine, and neuter forms, to agree with the gender of the noun following it, and that this numeral and the noun will usually have the same endings : dva pasoša—two passports (m.) ; dve sestre—two sisters ; dva jezera—two lakes (n.). An adjective qualifying a noun in the genitive singular after the numerals 2, 3, 4 ; 22, 23, 24 ; 32, 33, 34, etc., takes the endings of the genitive singular of the indefinite form of the adjective declensions ; again, then, when the numeral is *dva, dve, dva* the endings will usually be the same for numeral, adjective, and noun : dva dobra sina—two good sons ; dve vesele devojke—two merry girls ; dva mala sela—two little villages ; četrdeset i četiri velika grada—44 large cities.

The same rule applies to the agreement of the active past participle when a noun following the numerals 2, 3, 4, 22, 23, 24, etc., is the subject of a verb in the compound past tense :

dva dobra sina su radila—two good sons were working ; but the masculine plural ending *-i* (radili) may also be used when the subject is masculine.

All other cardinal numerals (5 to 20, 25 to 30, etc.) are followed by the genitive plural : devet inteligentnih sinova—9 intelligent sons ; petnaest udatih žena—15 married women ; dvadeset i sedam visokih brda—27 high mountains. The active past participle used in the past tense following these will take the usual plural endings : devet sinova su bili ; petnaest žena su bile ; dvadeset i sedam brda su bila.

As *stotina* (hundred), *hiljada* and *tisuća* (thousand) are feminine nouns, it will now be clear why 400, for example, is *četiri stotine* (gen. sing.), while 500 is *pet stotina* (gen. pl.).

With the exception of *jedan*, which must be treated as an adjective, cardinal numerals are not declined after prepositions, and the noun following them will always be in the genitive (singular or plural) whatever the case the preceding preposition would otherwise govern.

Compare : u jednom selu ; u dva sela ; u devet sela ; s¹ jednim sinom ; sa dva sina ; sa dvadeset sinova. See p. 9 : sa tri mala prozora.

The numerals 2, 3, and 4 may be declined, but are seldom used in their declined forms. The declension of *dva*, *dve*, *dva* is :

Nom.	dva (m., n.)	dve (f.)	Acc.	dva (m., n.)	dve (f.)
Gen.	dvaju	dveju	Instr.	dvama	dvema
Dat.	dvama	dvema	Loc.	dvama	dvema

' Both ' may be either *oba* (m.), *obe* (f.), *oba* (n.), or *obadva* (m.), *obadve* (f.), *obadva* (n.). These are declined like *dva*, *dve*, *dva*, but as the rules given above regarding the use of *dva*, *dve*, *dva* apply also to these words they are not often used in their declined forms.

¹ Abbreviated from *sa*.

The declension of *tri* and *četiri*, for all three genders, is :

Nom. and acc. : *tri*, *četiri*.

Gen. : *triju*, *četirju*.

Dat., instr., loc. : *trima*, *četirma*.

Examples of the use of these numerals when declined are : *stanovnici dvaju (triju) velikih gradova*—the inhabitants of 2 (3) large towns ; *drži ga dvema (obema) rukama*—he is holding it with two (both) hands. Here the numerals are declined because no preposition precedes them ; it will be noticed that they no longer govern the genitive singular, but that adjectives and nouns following them are in the same case as the numeral itself, and in the plural.

Once, twice, three times are *jedanput*, *dvaput*, *triput*, or *jedan put*, *dva puta*, *tri puta* ; 4 times, 5 times, etc., are *četiri puta*, *pet puta*, etc.

Nijedan means 'not one', and takes a negative verb : *nijedna žena nije došla*—not one woman came.

VOCABULARY

Božić—Christmas	minut—minute
čestitka—greetings card	nedelja—week
dinar—Yugoslav coin	pročitati (pf.)—to read
dnevno—daily	različit—different, various
dopadati se (ipf.)—to be pleasing to	težak, teška—heavy, difficult
funta—pound	turist—tourist
hrana—food	voda—water
kućica—cottage	vodič—guide

Read and translate : 1. Napisao je šest važnih pisama za pedeset minuta. 2. Zašto imate četiri telefonska imenika ? 3. Rezervirali smo pet lepih soba—jednu za mene i moga muža i četiri za Jovana i njegovih sedam mladih drugova.

4. Videćete dvadeset i jednu zgradu : dve velike kuće i devetnaest malih kućica. 5. Njena dva sina su spremala (spremali) ručak, dok je ona sedela u bašti sa svoje tri prijateljice. 6. Njegova žena mi je rekla da je on bio pet nedelja u Engleskoj i da je pušio pedeset engleskih cigareta dnevno. 7. Izgubili smo hiljadu dinara ; sad imamo samo trideset i jednu englesku funtu u džepu. 8. Nema (there isn't) dosta mesta za ovih petnaest velikih paketa u jednim kolima. 9. Bilo je (there were) osamnaest studenata a samo četrnaest stolica ; četiri studenta su dakle sedela (sedeli) na podu. 10. Obećala je da će pevati deset narodnih pesama. Radujem se, jer mi se mnogo dopadaju jugoslovenske narodne pesme.

Translate each of the following sentences twice : the second time with the numerals which are in brackets.

1. I'll take the 3 (5) young girls with me. 2. He returned with 4 (6) heavy packages. 3. I think you've read these 2 (5) important articles : will you return them to him ? 4. She received 51 (57) greeting-cards at Christmas ; she always receives a lot. 5. We have enough food for 30 (32) poor women. 6. He says he has read all 3 (8) pages of this letter in 4 (14) minutes. 7. One guide (2 guides) went to the museum with the 11 (22) weary tourists. 8. They bathe in the calm water of this lake 3 (5) times daily. 9. I'm learning these words ; I've already learned 100 (102) new words today. 10. Did you notice those 2 (6) men ?¹ Each of them is travelling with 3 (5) different passports !

¹ men—*ljudi*, has genitive plural *ljudi*. (*Čovek* has no regular plural form.)

LESSON XV

ORDINAL NUMERALS. THE DATE. THE DAY OF THE WEEK. THE TIME OF DAY

The Ordinal Numerals are declined like definite adjectives with stems ending in a hard consonant (with the exception of *treći*, which has a 'soft' ending), agreeing like adjectives with the nouns which they qualify.

1st	prvi, prva, prvo	19th	devetnaesti
2nd	drugi, druga, drugo ¹	20th	dvadeseti
3rd	treći, treća, treće	21st	dvadeset prvi, etc.
4th	četvrti, četvrta, četvrto	30th	trideseti
5th	peti, etc.	40th	četrdeseti
6th	šesti	50th	pedeseti
7th	sedmi	60th	šezdeseti
8th	osmi	70th	sedamdeseti
9th	deveti	80th	osamdeseti
10th	deseti	90th	devedeseti
11th	jedanaesti	100th	stoti
12th	dvanaesti	200th	dvestoti
13th	trinaesti	300th	tristoti
14th	četрнаesti	400th	četiristoti
15th	petnaesti	500th	petstoti, etc.
16th	šesnaesti	1,000th	hiljaditi
17th	sedamnaesti	1,001st	hiljadu prvi
18th	osamnaesti	2,000th	dvehiljaditi

The Serbian forms of the names of the months, which are very similar to English, were given in Lesson I. They are repeated here with the Croatian forms alongside them, for in this respect Croatian differs from Serbian. (For the sake of

¹ Also means 'the other'. 'Another' with the sense of 'one more' is *još jedan* (see p. 53): *dajte mi još jednu šolju čaja*.

simplicity and consistency the Serbian forms are used in this book.)

januar	siječanj ¹	jul	srpanj
februar	veljača	avgust	kolovoz
mart	ožujak	septembar	rujan
april	travanj	oktobar	listopad
maj	svibanj	novembar	studeni
jun	lipanj	decembar	prosinac

Answering the question 'Koji je danas?', in which the word *datum* (date) is understood (Koji je datum danas?—What is the date today?), the day and month are in the nominative case, and the ordinal numeral is masc. sing., agreeing with *dan* (day), which is understood: (Danas je) prvi januar—(Today is) 1 January; treći april—3 April; dvadeset osmi februar—28 February.

To answer the question 'when?' the ordinal numeral and the name of the month are in the genitive case—a case which is used for many other expressions denoting 'time when': Kad se to desilo?—When did that happen? (Desilo se) trinaestog avgusta—(It happened) on the 13th August; tridesetog oktobra—on the 30th October; trećeg decembra—on the 3rd December.

In answer to either type of question the year is expressed thus: Hiljadu devet stotina šezdeset druge godine (1962), i.e. *hiljadu* (thousand) is in the accusative,² *devet stotina*—nine hundreds (*stotina* is genitive plural after *devet*), and *šezdeset druge*, the ordinal numeral (62nd), is in the genitive

¹ The vowel *a* in the final syllable of *siječanj*, *ožujak*, *travanj*, *svibanj*, *lipanj*, *srpanj*, *rujan*, *prosinac*, *septembar*, *oktobar*, *novembar*, and *decembar* is 'moveable' (e.g. gen. *siječnja*, *decembra*).

² The accusative singular of *stotina* and *hiljada* is often used when one would expect some other case.

singular, feminine, agreeing with the noun *godine* (genitive singular of *godina*—year).

1389 : hiljadu tri stotine osamdeset devete godine.

1773 : hiljadu sedam stotina sedamdeset treće godine.

1895 : hiljadu osam stotina devedeset pete godine.¹

Today is the 25th December 1984—Danas je dvadeset peti decembar hiljadu devet stotina osamdeset četvrte godine.

He came on the 8th September 1951—Došao je osmog septembra hiljadu devet stotina pedeset prve godine.

The date on a letter is usually written thus : 8.XII.1965.

The question 'Koji je dan danas?' asks the day of the week, and the answer will be 'Danas je ponedjeljak'—'Today is Monday' (see p. 7, Lesson I).

'Hour' is either *sat* (nominative and genitive plural *sati*) or *čas* (pl. *časovi*).

'Koliko je sati?'—'What time is it?' means literally 'How many is (it) of hours?'

4 o'clock—četiri sata or četiri časa (four hours); 5 o'clock—pet sati or pet časova.

Pola or *po*, both of which mean 'half', are used as follows to express the half hour : 4.30—pola pet or četiri i po.

'Quarter' is *četvrt* :

3.15—tri i četvrt (or tri i petnaest).

3.45—četvrt do četiri (or tri i četrdeset i pet, or petnaest do četiri).

12.35—dvanaest i trideset i pet (or dvadeset i pet do jedan).

The answer to 'u koliko sati?'—'at what time?' is : u jedan sat (acc.)—at 1 o'clock ; u pola osam—at half past seven (*pola* is indeclinable); u dvadeset do devet—at 20 to 9 ; u podne—at noon ; u ponoć—at midnight (*ponoć* is fem.).

¹ It is also possible to use *u* with the locative : u hiljadu osam stotina devedeset petoj godini—in 1895.

VOCABULARY

čudan, čudna—strange	prst—finger
desni—right-hand	prsten—ring (on finger)
desno—on the right	radio (gen. radija)—radio
ili . . . ili—either . . . or	roditi se (pf.)—to be born
junak—hero	slučaj—case, event (u svakom slu- čaju—in any case)
levi—left-hand	spisak (gen. spiska)—list
levo—on the left	stati, stanem (pf.)—to stop, stand still
najmanje—at least	tek—only, not before
napustiti (pf.)—to leave, abandon	večeravati (ipf.)—to have supper, dine
poginuti, poginem (pf.)— to perish, be killed	
prazan, prazna—empty	

Read and translate : 1. Došao je u pola šest a otišao u četvrt do osam. 2. Stići ću vozom u pet i dvadeset. 3. Desilo se ili petnaestog ili šesnaestog aprila. 4. U koliko sati polazi prvi voz za Beograd? U dva i trideset i pet. 5. Pročitao sam njegov treći roman, a sada čitam četvrti; mnogo mi se dopadaju. 6. Rodio se tridesetog novembra hiljadu devet stotina dvadeset druge godine; u svakom slučaju on ima najmanje četrdeset godina. 7. Da li je danas jedanaesti ili dvanaesti februar? 8. Ustao je tek u deset sati i napustio kuću u četvrt do jedanaest. 9. Moji roditelji stanuju u petoj kući desno. 10. Nadamo se da ćete doći u sedam i trideset, jer večeravamo obično u osam.

Translate : 1. It happened on the 1st December. 2. What is the date today? I think it's the 31st November. 3. It can't be; November has only 30 days. 4. I opened the first ten envelopes; the fifth and seventh were empty. 5. Many Serbian heroes were killed at Kosovo in 1389. 6. What is the time? I think it's half past 5. 7. They dined at a quarter to 8.

8. You'll find the book on the third shelf; give it to me, please. 9. We'll listen to the news on the wireless at 6 o'clock. 10. Isn't it strange, this clock always stops at midnight, or perhaps at mid-day; anyway, at 12 o'clock. 11. He went away from home at ten past four on the ninth of August and did not return. 12. Does she wear the ring on the third finger of her left (hand) or of her right hand? 13. You're first on the list, I'm second, she's third and he's fourth. 14. He was born on the 3rd April 1945. 15. Ours is the fourth house in the second street on the left.

VOCABULARY

baš—just, exactly	pamet (f.)—mind, intelligence
brijati, brijem (ipf.)—to shave	pasti, padnem; pao, pala (pf.)—to fall (pasti na pamet, with dat.—to occur to)
čekaonica—waiting-room	povući, povučem; povukao, povukla (pf.)—to draw, pull
dugačak, dugačka—long (of things)	prag—threshold
još jedan—one more	pripaliti (pf.)—to light, ignite
kancelarija—office	raspoložen—disposed; in a good mood
milo—dear, pleasing (milo mi je—I am glad)	ravnodušno—indifferently
ministar (gen. ministra)—minister	stojati, stojim (ipf.)—to stand
ministrov—minister's	taman—just, just when
nozdrva—nostril	

Read and translate :

Taman je hteo da pređe prag, a njemu je palo na pamet da se pita koji je datum danas. Je li možda trinaesti? Bio je prvi april, hvala Bogu. Ušao je u čekaonicu. Već kad je pošao da se brije kupio je nekoliko dobrih cigareta i metnuo u džep.

D*

Ponudio je najpre momku, koji (who) je stojao pred ministrovim vratima, cigaretu, pustio ga da pripali i povuče dva tri dima,¹ pa je tek onda počeo :

— Je li već došao g.² ministar ?

Momak je prvo povukao dugačak jedan dim, pustio ga kroz nozdrve i odgovorio ravnodušno :

— Neće danas dolaziti u kancelariju !

— A, tako !

Baš je Petroniju bilo milo što neće ministar doći danas u kancelariju. On je ponudio momku još jednu cigaretu i otišao vrlo raspoložen.

(Branislav Nušić, contd.)

¹ *dim* (smoke) here means 'puff'.

² Abbreviation for *gospodin*.

LESSON XVI

THE COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE FORMS OF ADJECTIVES

The endings of the comparative forms of adjectives, corresponding to the English -er, may be :

		Singular			Plural		
		m.	f.	n.	m.	f.	n.
<i>either</i>	1.	-iji	-ija	-ije	-iji	-ije	-ija
	or 2.	-ši	-ša	-še	-ši	-še	-ša
	or 3.	-ji	-ja	-je	-ji	-je	-ja

These are suffixed to the stem of the adjective. A 'moveable *a*' in the last syllable of the masc. nom. sing. of the positive form of an adjective, e.g. *prijatan* (and in the acc. sing. when this is the same as the nominative) will then of course be dropped.

The first group of endings, -*iji*, etc., is taken by most adjectives :

jeftin—cheap : jeftiniji, jeftinija, jeftinije (sing.) ; jeftiniji, jeftinije, jeftinija (pl.)—cheaper.

prijatan—pleasant : prijatniji, etc.—pleasanter ; star—old : stariji, etc.—older.

The second group, -*ši*, etc., is taken by only three adjectives : lak—easy : lakši, lakša, lakše (sing.) ; lakši, lakše, lakša (pl.) ; lep—beautiful, nice : lepši ; mek—soft : mekši.

The commonest adjectives taking the third group of endings, -*ji*, etc., are given in a list below. In studying this list you should notice the following points : the consonant *j* usually coalesces with, or 'softens' a consonant immediately preceding it, bringing about a change of consonant ; when it is preceded by two consonants the former of which is *s* or *z*, these are usually also 'softened' ; the consonant *l* is inserted

when *j* would be preceded by *b*, *p*, *v*, or *m*.¹ If you learn the positive and comparative (masc. nom. sing.) forms of each of the following adjectives you will be learning these rules automatically.

- beo,² bela, belo (sing.) ; beli, bele, bela (pl.)—white.
 belji, belja, belje (sing.) ; belji, belje, belja (pl.)—whiter.
 besan, besna, besno ; besni, besne, besna—furious.
 bešnji, bešnja, bešnje ; bešnji, bešnje, bešnja—more furious.
 blag—mild : blaži, etc.—milder.
 bled—pale : bleđi.
 brz—quick : brži.
 crn—black : crnji.
 čest—frequent, dense : češći.
 čvrst—firm : čvršći.
 drag—dear : draži.
 dug—long : duži.
 gluv—deaf : gluvlji.
 grub—rough, coarse : grublji.
 gust—dense : gušći.
 jak—strong : jači.
 kriv—crooked ; guilty : krivlji.
 krut—stiff : krući.
 lud—stupid, mad : luđi.
 ljut—angry : ljući.
 mlad—young : mlađi.
 skup—expensive : skuplji.
 suv (*or* suh)—dry : suvlji (suši).
 tesan—tight : tešnji.
 tih—quiet : tiši.
 tup—blunt : tuplji.
 tvrd—hard : tvrđi.

¹ These consonant changes will be discussed again in Lesson XVIII. You will not find examples of all of them in the comparative forms of adjectives.

² See Lesson XVIII.

The following adjectives also take these endings, but first drop their final syllable. The same consonant changes then take place :

blizak (fem. bliska)—near, close : bliži	plitak (fem. plitka)—shallow : plići
dalek—far ; dalji	redak (fem. retka)—rare, sparse : ređi
debeo (fem. debela)—thick, fat : deblji	sladak (fem. slatka)—sweet : slađi
dubok—deep : dublji	širok—broad : širi
dugačak (fem. dugačkà)— long (of things) : duži	tanak (fem. tanka)—slender : tanji
gladak (fem. glatka)—smooth : glađi	težak (fem. teška)—heavy, difficult : teži
kratak (fem. kratka)—short : kraći	uzak (fem. uska)—narrow : uži
nizak (fem. niska)—low : niži	žestok—violent, fiery : žešći

The comparative forms of four adjectives are irregular :

dobar—good : bolji, bolja, bolje, etc.—better.

zao (zla, zlo) *or* rđav—bad : gori, gora, gore, etc.—worse.

veliki—large : veći, veća, veće, etc.—larger.

malen *or* mali—small : manji, manja, manje, etc.—smaller.

Whatever is the type of the adjective in its positive form, it will become a definite adjective with a soft stem in its comparative form ; hence the neuter singular (nom.) always ends *-e*, the genitive singular, masc. and neut., will always end *-eg* or *-ega*, and dative singular *-em* or *-emu* (see Lesson VII).

Most adjectives in the neuter singular may be used as adverbs : lepo—nicely ; dobro—well ; brzo—quickly, etc.¹ The neuter singular of the comparative form of an adjective will therefore be the comparative form of the corresponding

¹ But adjectives ending *-ski* have corresponding adverbs ending *-ski*.

adverb : brže—more quickly ; manje—less ; dalje—farther ; lakše—more easily. *Više* is used as the comparative of the adverb *mного* (‘ much ’), and like *mного* is followed by the genitive singular or genitive plural :

mного vode—much water ; *više vode*—more water (gen. sing.).

mного žena—many women ; *više žena*—more women (gen. pl.).

The superlative of all adjectives, and of their corresponding adverbs, is formed by prefixing *naj-* to the comparative form : *najstariji*, *najstarija*, etc.—oldest ; *najlepši*, etc.—most beautiful ; *najdraži*—dearest ; *najbolji*—best ; *najbrže*—most quickly ; *najmanje*—least, in the least ; *najviše*—most, most of all.

The preposition *od*, followed by the genitive case, is the usual equivalent of the English ‘ than ’ when two nouns or pronouns are compared : *ova Gramatika je teža od onog romana*—this Grammar is more difficult than that novel ; *on je stariji od mene*—he is older than I.

Otherwise ‘ than ’ is *nego* or *nego što* : *život je mirniji u selu nego u varoši*—life is quieter in the village than in the town ; *vaša zemlja je još lepša nego što sam očekivao*—your country is still more beautiful than I expected.

Notice the following uses of the comparative : *što brže*, *što dalje*—as fast as possible, as far as possible ; *sve brže*, *sve dalje*—faster and faster, farther and farther ; *tim bolje*—so much the better ; *čitala je i dalje*—she went on reading (‘ she read also further ’) ; *i tako dalje* (abbreviated to *i t. d.*)—and so on.

VOCABULARY

bogat—rich

breskva—peach

glasno—loudly

hrabar, hrabra—brave

intelligentan, inteligentna—

intelligent

magla—fog	riba—fish
med—honey	saobraćaj—traffic
obecavati (ipf.)—to promise	sigurno—certainly, surely
očigledno—obviously, evidently	sledeći—next, following
platno—linen	slikar—painter
prestati, prestanem (pf.)—to cease	smokva—fig
prevoditi (ipf.)—to translate	svet—world (also ‘people’)
rat—war	ukusan, ukusna—nice, delicious
rečenica—sentence	voziti (ipf.)—to drive

Read and translate : 1. Ulica pored mosta nije duža od naše ; mislim da je mnogo kraća. 2. Da li ste rekli da je London najveći grad na svetu ? 3. Najskuplje stvari nisu uvek i najbolje. 4. Molim vas, dajte mi jači čaj. 5. Desetog novembra magla u Londonu je bila gušća nego obično. 6. Olgin glas je uvek mnogo tiši od Milanovog. 7. Jovan misli da je engleski najteži jezik na svetu, ali vi sigurno mislite da je srpskohrvatski mnogo teži. 8. Da li je trideseti decembar najkraći dan u godini ? Ne znam, ali mislim da je dvadeset prvi jun najduži. 9. Vozili smo se najlepšim putem, iako je bio opasniji. 10. Kažu da je med slađi od šećera, ali nije. 11. Trčala je sve brže, sve dok nije mogla da ide dalje. 12. Da li verujete da bogatiji čovek nije zadovoljniji od siromašnog ? 13. Obećavam vam da ću vam poslati što više novca. 14. Nadam se da će more biti mirnije posle podne ; više volim da se kupam u mirnijoj vodi. 15. Šta radite ? Učim reči, čitam srpskohrvatske rečenice, prevodim engleske rečenice, i tako dalje.

Translate : 1. I wonder whether that hotel is better than this. 2. It is easier (easier is) to read than to translate. 3. There are (*ima*, with gen.) larger and more beautiful buildings in Belgrade now than before the war. 4. Why don't you come

more often ? 5. Peaches and figs are certainly more delicious in your country than in ours. 6. He's evidently braver than I. 7. Do you think that Serbo-Croat is more difficult than English ? 8. Will your two books be more expensive than these ? 9. Did they say that he's their best painter ? I've seen better pictures than his here. 10. It will be quieter for you (say 'to you') here. 11. Honey isn't sweeter than sugar, but it's nicer. 12. We came very early, but they had arrived still earlier. 13. When they begged her to stop she sang louder and louder. 14. Is the water deeper here than in (*na*) that place ? We prefer to bathe in the deepest water. 15. Here is most (*najviše*, with gen.) traffic, because this is the widest road. 16. He spoke more clearly when he noticed that I was an Englishman. 17. Are the cheapest newspapers the most interesting in your country ? 18. This linen is coarser, but fortunately I like coarse linen. 19. She's the most intelligent woman in this office. 20. The fish in the following folk ballad is certainly very intelligent :

Riba i djevojka ¹

Djevojka sjedi ² kraj ³ mora,
 Pak ⁴ sama sebi govori :
 Ah, mili ⁵ Bože i dragi !
 Ima l' što ⁶ šire od mora ?
 Ima l' što duže od polja ?
 Ima l' što brže od konja ?
 Ima l' što slađe od meda ?
 Ima l' što draže od brata ?
 Govori riba iz vode :
 Djevojko, luda budalo ⁷ !
 Šire je nebo od mora,
 Duže je more od polja,

Brže su oči ⁸ od konja,
Sladi je šećer od meda,
Draži je dragi ⁹ od brata.

1. *devojka* in *e*-dialect. 2. *sedi* in *e*-dialect. 3. beside (with gen.). 4. and. 5. dear. 6. 'Ima li nešto.' 7. *budala* (always feminine in form)—fool. 8. eyes (fem. pl.). 9. dear, i.e. the beloved.

LESSON XVII

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.
RELATIVE PRONOUNS. EXPRESSIONS OF TIME

The Interrogative Pronouns : *ko* ?—‘ who ? ’ and *šta* ? (or *što* ?)—‘ what ? ’.

Nom.	<i>ko</i> ¹ —who ?	<i>šta</i> (or <i>što</i>)—what ?
Gen.	<i>koga</i> —(of) whom ?	<i>čega</i>
Dat.	<i>kome</i> —(to) whom ?	<i>čemu</i>
Acc.	<i>koga</i> —whom ?	<i>šta</i> (or <i>što</i>)
Instr.	(s) <i>kim</i> (e)—(with) whom ?	<i>čim</i> (e)
Loc.	(na) <i>kome</i> —(on) whom ?	(na) <i>čemu</i>

(These pronouns have, of course, no Vocative Case.)

The final vowel *e*, given in brackets, is often omitted. *Ko je onaj čovek* ?—Who is that man ? *Šta je ovo* ?—What is this ? *Ko su one žene* ?—Who are those women ? *Šta su ove stvari* ?—What are these things ? *Koga se bojite* ?—Of whom are you afraid ? *Šta kažete* ?—What are you saying ? *Kome ste govorili* ?—To whom were you speaking ? *S kime ste putovali* ?—With whom did you travel ? *Čime* ² *ste otvorili kutiju* ?—With what did you open the box ?

Niko (nobody) and *neko* (somebody) are declined like *ko* ; *ništa* (nothing) is declined like *šta* ; ‘ something ’ is *nešto* in nom. and acc., and is otherwise declined like *šta*.

Notice the negative verb in the following sentences : *Niko nije ovde*—nobody is here ; *ništa nije bolje*—nothing is better. In negative sentences pronouns, verbs, and adverbs which have negative forms must all be negative : two negatives do not cancel each other out as they do in English : I saw nobody—*nisam video nikoga* ; I never saw anybody anywhere—*nikad nisam video nikoga nigde*. (*Nikad* or *nikada*—never ; *nigde*—nowhere.)

¹ *tko* in *ije*-dialect.

² See Lesson III.

A preposition governing the gen., acc., instr., or loc. case of the pronouns *niko* and *ništa* is usually inserted after the prefix *ni*, e.g. *ni od koga*—from nobody ; *ni s kim*—with nobody.

Čiji, čija, čije (sing.), *čiji, čije, čija* (pl.) asks the question ‘whose?’, and agrees with the noun following it. It is declined as a definite adjective with a ‘soft’ stem (see p. 42). *Čija karta?*—whose ticket? *čija je ova karta?*—whose is this ticket? *čiji šeširi?*—whose hats? *čiji su ovi šeširi?*—whose are these hats? *čiju knjigu čitate?*—whose book are you reading? *čijim čekom ste platili račun?*—with whose cheque (ček, m.) did you pay the bill? *Ničiji* means ‘nobody’s’.

The relative pronoun ‘who’, ‘which’—*koji, koja, koje* (sing.), *koji, koje, koja* (pl.) is in some parts of the country declined throughout like a definite adjective with a ‘soft’ stem ; but usually its forms in certain cases in the masc. and neut. singular are the same as those of the interrogative pronoun *ko*. Notice that the declension of the relative pronoun is then very similar to that of the possessive adjective *moj* (my).

	Singular			Plural		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	koji	koja	koje	koji	koje	koja
Gen.	koga	koje	koga	kojih	kojih	kojih
Dat.	kome	kojoj	kome	kojim(a)	kojim(a)	kojim(a)
Acc.	koga ¹	koju	koje	koje	koje	koja
	koji ²					
Instr.	kojim	kojom	kojim	kojim(a)	kojim(a)	kojim(a)
Loc.	kome	kojoj	kome	kojim(a)	kojim(a)	kojim(a)

The final *a* given in brackets is usually omitted.

This relative pronoun agrees in number and gender with the

¹ Referring to an ‘animate’ noun.

² Referring to an ‘inanimate’ noun.

noun to which it refers (*žena koja peva*—the woman who is singing ; *žene koje pevaju*—the women who are singing), but its case is decided by its function in its own clause : student koga vidite je njen sin—the student (nom. masc. sing.) whom (acc. masc. sing.) you see is her son ; znam devojk^u kojoj ste dali pismo—I know the girl (acc. fem. sing.) to whom (dat. fem. sing.) you gave the letter ; sreo sam putnike s kojim sam putovao—I met the travellers (acc. masc. pl.) with whom (instr. masc. pl.) I travelled.

As in English the pronoun ‘ that ’ is often used as a relative pronoun (‘ the book that I gave you ’), so *što* may be used as a relative pronoun referring to a noun of any gender or number ; it is declined like the similar interrogative pronoun, again according to its function in its own clause (nom. and acc. are always *što*) : imam knjige što ste mi pozajmili—I have the books that (acc.) you lent to me. The relative pronoun cannot be omitted. ‘ The letter you received ’ must be translated ‘ pismo koje (or što) ste primili ’.

Što is always used as the relative pronoun after *ono*, *sve* : *ono što* means ‘ that which ’, or often ‘ what ’ in English : I believed what she said—Verovao sam ono što je kazala ; you have everything that is necessary—imate sve što je potrebno.

Expressions of Time.

The accusative case is generally used in adverbial phrases denoting duration of time : čekao je jedan sat—he waited one hour ; radiću godinu dana—I’ll work for a year. (In sentences such as this the nouns nedelja—week, mesec—month, and godina—year are often followed by the genitive plural *dana*—‘ of days ’, e.g. ostao je mesec ¹ dana—he stayed a month of days.)

The genitive case is generally used in adverbial phrases

¹ *mesec* has gen. pl. *meseci*.

denoting 'time when': *došla je idućeg dana*—she came the next day; *bio sam tamo prošle godine*—I was there last year; *ne mogu da idem ove godine*—I can't go this year.

In certain phrases these cases are interchangeable: *ceo*¹ *dan* or *celoga dana*—the whole day; *svaki dan* or *svakoga dana*—each (every) day.

'On Monday'² is *u ponedjeljak* (acc.), 'on Wednesday'—*u sredu*, etc. But if the name of the day is qualified by an adjective, the genitive case is used: next Monday—*idućeg ponedjeljka*.

The instrumental singular is used for the phrases 'on Mondays', 'on Wednesdays', etc.: *ponedjeljkom*, *sredom*. **O**bično *dolazi utorkom*, ali prošle *nedelje došao je u četvrtak*—he usually comes on Tuesdays, but last week (gen. sing.) he came on Thursday. (Notice the use of the imperfective and perfective aspects of the verb in this sentence.)

The instrumental plurals: *satima*, *mesecima*, *godinama*, etc., mean 'for hours', 'for months', 'for years': *već godinama je bio u Jugoslaviji*—he had been in Yugoslavia for years already.

Note the following expressions:

Stići ću do pet sati—I'll arrive by 5 o'clock.

Došao je na jedan dan—he came for one day (acc.).

Doći će kroz (or za) jedan sat—he'll come in an hour's time (acc.).

O Božiću (loc.)—at Christmas; *pred Božić* (acc.)—just before Christmas; *pred večer*—just before evening, in the early evening; *krajem* (instr.)¹ *decembra* (gen.)—at the end of December; *početkom*² *januara*—at the beginning of January; *ujutru* or *pre podne*—in the morning; *posle podne*—in the afternoon; *uveče*—in the evening; *danju*—by day; *noću*—by night.

1. nom. *kraj*. 2. nom. *početak*.

¹ See p. 112.

² See p. 7.

VOCABULARY

i . . . i . . . —both . . . and	sednica—meeting, assembly
istina—truth	sresti, sretnem ; sreo, srela (pf.)—to meet
odložiti (pf.)—to postpone	staviti (pf.), stavljati (ipf.)— to place
opet—again	stideti se, stidim se (ipf.)—to be ashamed
posećivati, posećujem (ipf.)— to visit	strašan, strašna—frightful
poverljiv—confidential	sutradan—the next day
prekosutra—the day after to- morrow	
razgovarati (ipf.)—to talk, converse	

Read and translate : 1. Znaete li o čemu je čitala u onoj knjizi koju ste joj dali ? 2. Pitam se ko će doći na večeru. Koga ste pozvali ? 3. Subotom nisam nikada slobodan ; videćemo se u četvrtak. 4. Ko je ona žena s kojom ste razgovarali kad sam vas video prošle nedelje u muzeju ? 5. Već je zaboravio sve što je učio. 6. Stići ćemo početkom aprila i ostaćemo celo proleće u Splitu, kod onih prijatelja o kojim sam vam često govorio. 7. Čiji je ovaj paket ? Ne može se pročitati adresa na njemu. 8. Čime ću pisati ? Izgubio sam i pero i olovku. 9. Niko mu nije kazao čija je ona karta, pa ju je stavio u svoj džep. 10. Šta ste odgovorili kad vas je zapitao da li vam se dopadaju njegove slike ?

Translate : 1. I don't remember the name of that man who spoke to me about you on Tuesday. Who is he ? 2. He hoped he would meet the girl whom he had seen in the train. 3. To whom did you give the letter ? 4. What's that ? Is it a page out of the book which you were reading ? 5. Whom shall we see at the theatre this evening ? 6. What was he writing with—pen or pencil ? 7. With whose son were you speaking ? 8. Nobody ever lives long in these houses. 9. I'm ashamed of this room ; nothing is ever in order in it. 10. Whose were those things that you were putting into the drawer when I

came into the room? 11. This is the longest letter I've ever received. I shall never have enough time to read it. 12. We didn't see anybody, although we were nearer than you. 13. You've been eating and drinking all day. 14. The two young men with whom I was returning from the theatre last night were Milan and his younger brother. 15. You can't believe everything he says; what he told you this morning isn't true. 16. Who is the man whom you always visit on Wednesdays? 17. Can you come for an hour? I hope you'll arrive by half past four. 18. Something terrible has happened. We've lost the money that you gave us. 19. Do you know whose flat this is (whose is this flat)? 20. I wonder what he was writing to her about.

Read and translate :

Sutradan je ministar bio u kancelariji ali je odmah otišao.

Prekosutra ministar je u kancelariji, ali neće primati.

Četvrtog dana kod ministra su dva druga ministra i „imaju neki važan razgovor“ (to mu je momak poverljivo kazao), pa se ne zna da li će stići da prima.

Petog dana ministar je kazao da će primiti samo one koji imaju vrlo važan posao, koji se ne može do sutra odložiti.

Šestog dana Petronije je morao opet da se obrije. Ali tog dana opet ministar nije dolazio u kancelariju.

Sedmog dana bila je ministarska sednica, pa nije mogao ministar nikoga da primi.

Osmog dana ministar neće primati.

Devetog dana ministar je bio u kancelariji, ali je odmah otišao.

Desetog dana ministar je primio sedam ljudi, a zatim je momak rekao : oni koji su još ostali da dođu sutra.

Trinaestog dana Petronije je morao opet da se obrije, ali kad je prešao prag na ministarstvu, setio se da je već trinaesti april.

(Branislav Nušić, continued.)

LESSON XVIII

CONSONANT CHANGES AND OTHER NOTES ON
THE FORMS OF WORDS

The rules for the commonest consonant changes, which have already been mentioned, are repeated here with further details and the rules regarding those other consonant changes which you will need to be able to apply yourself. Do not try to memorise all the rules now, but use this chapter for reference as you do the exercises. The rules are in any case more easily learned by memorising the examples.

The consonants *k*, *g*, *h* become *c*, *z*, *s* respectively before the vowel *i* in noun declensions :

Masculine :

vojnîk (soldier) : nom. pl. vojnicî ; dat., instr., and loc. pl. vojnicîma.

bubreg (kidney) : nom. pl. bubrezî ; dat., instr., and loc. pl. bubrezîma.

siromah (poor man) : nom. pl. siromasi ; dat., instr., and loc. pl. siromasîma.

Feminine :

reka : dat. and loc. sing. reci.

knjîga : dat. and loc. sing. knjîzi.

snaha : dat. and loc. sing. snasi (but also snahi).

Note that this change does not take place in adjective declensions : *jak* (strong) : nom. pl. *jaki*.

Exceptions are *tetka*—aunt (dat. and loc. sing. *tetki*) ; *mačka*—cat (dat. and loc. sing. *mački*) ; *mazga*—mule (dat. and loc. sing. *mazgi*) and other feminine nouns whose stems end in the same consonant combinations (*tk*, *čk*, *zg*). Further exceptions are proper names, e.g. Anka (dat. Anki), Luka (dat. Luki).

This change of *k* to *c*, *g* to *z*, and *h* to *s* also takes place in the imperative of verbs before the vowel *i*. Examples will be given when the formation of the imperative is explained (Lesson XX).

Exercise : Give the nominative and dative plural of *pukovník* (colonel), *radník* (worker), *beleg* (mark, sign), *Čech* (a Czech), *orah* (walnut) ; and the dative singular of *slika*, *ruka*, and *noga*.¹

The same consonants, *k*, *g*, *h*, become *č*, *ž*, and *š* respectively before the vowel *e* in the vocative singular of masculine nouns : *vojník* has voc. sing. *vojniče* ; *Bog* (God) : voc. sing. *Bože* ² ; *duh* (spirit) : voc. sing. *duše*.

Exercise : Give the voc. sing. of *radník*, *junak*, *pukovník*, *drug*, *vrag* (devil), *siromah*.

This change (*k* to *č*, *g* to *ž*, *h* to *š*) also takes place when *k*, *g*, or *h* precede the vowel *e* in the present tense of verbs. In certain verbs with the present tense endings *-em*, *-eš*, *-e*, *-emo*, *-ete*, *-u* the consonant preceding the ending *-u* differs from that which precedes the other endings. The consonant *č* in the *-či* ending of the infinitive of these verbs derives from the coalescing of the consonants *kt*, *gt*, or *ht* ; in the present tense the change *k* to *č*, *g* to *ž*, *h* to *š* has taken place before the vowel *e*, but not before *u* : *vući* (*vuk-ti*)—*vučem*, *vučeš*, *vuče*, *vučemo*, *vučete*, *vuku*.

Exercise : Give the present tense of *pečí* (*pek-ti*)—to bake ; *seći* (*sek-ti*)—to cut ; *strići* (*strig-ti*)—to shear ; *vreći* (*vreh-ti*)—to thresh.

The same change takes place in the passive participles of these verbs before the vowel *e* (e.g. *pečen*—baked) ; this will be shown in Lesson XXI. This change also takes place in the aorist tense, which you will not need to use yourself in

¹ These nouns have genitive plural *ruku* and *nogu*.

² Nominative plural is *bogovi*—gods.

speaking or writing, but will need to recognise in your reading. Examples will be found in Chapter XXII.

Sometimes this change takes place also before the vowel *i*, e.g. *majčin* (mother's) from *majka*.

C sometimes changes to *č* and *z* to *ž*, before the vowels *e* or *i*. This occurs principally in the vocative singular of masculine nouns: *stric* (uncle): voc. *striče*; *knez* (prince): *kneže*; and, in the same nouns, before the *-evi* ending of the plural: *stričevi*. As the vowel *a* in *otac* (father) is 'moveable', the vocative of this noun is *oče* (note that the *t* has also dropped) and plural *očevi*. The possessive adjective formed from these nouns is *stričev*, *knežev*, *očev*, etc.

'SOFTENING' OF CONSONANTS

The changes which take place when the consonant *j* immediately follows certain other consonants and 'softens' these have already been noticed, and examples of most of them occurred in the list of adjectives taking the endings *-ji*, etc., in the comparative. The full list (in alphabetical order) is: *b+j* — *blj*; *c+j* — *č*; *d+j* — *đ* (*dj*); *g+j* — *ž*; *h+j* — *š*; *k+j* — *č*; *l+j* — *lj*; *m+j* — *mlj*; *n+j* — *nj*; *p+j* — *plj*; *s+j* — *š*; *t+j* — *ć*; *v+j* — *vlj*; *z+j* — *ž*. (In the Cyrillic alphabet *lj* and *nj* each appear as one symbol: see pp. 2 and 3.)

Other examples of words in which these changes occur will be found among the passive participles in Chapter XXI, when *-jen* is suffixed to the stem of the verb. Here, to complete the list of examples of this 'softening' of consonants, are three passive participles: *bačen*—thrown (from *baciti*); *nošen*—worn (from *nositi*); *slomljen*—broken (from *slomiti*).

The passive participle of *pustiti* (to let go) is *pušten* (from *pust-jen*). This change takes place in certain other forms of words, although *st+j* usually becomes *šć* (*čest*, *češći*) and always does so in feminine nouns ending *-st* and taking the instrumental singular ending *-ju*, e.g. *opasnost* (danger):

instr. sing. *opasnošću*. This 'softening' regularly takes place when feminine nouns with consonantal ending take the instr. sing. ending *-ju*, e.g. *ljubav* (love) : *ljubavlju*.

Exercise : From p. 96 and the passive participles given above find examples to illustrate all the changes which take place when *j* 'softens' a preceding consonant or consonants.

ASSIMILATION OF CONSONANTS

If you pronounce the following pairs of consonants aloud you will realise that the former of each is 'voiceless' and the second 'voiced' : t—d ; p—b ; k—g ; f—v. The following is a list of voiceless and corresponding voiced consonants :

Voiceless :	č	ć	f	k	p	s	š	t
Voiced :	dž	đ	v	g	b	z	ž	d

Consonant groups containing two or more of these consonants will nearly always consist of either all voiceless or all voiced consonants, unless one of the consonants is *f* or *v*. A voiceless consonant immediately preceding a voiced consonant becomes voiced, and a voiced consonant immediately preceding a voiceless consonant becomes voiceless ; i.e. the first of a pair of two consonants must change, if necessary, in order that both shall be either voiced or voiceless. You will often notice this change in prepositional prefixes, e.g. *iz-* has become *is-* in *isterati* (to drive out), and *pod-* is *pot-* in *potpisati* (to sign). (The prefix *pred* is an exception, e.g. *predstaviti*—to introduce.)

The adjective *težak* therefore has fem. *teška*, neut. *teško* ; *sladak* has fem. *slatka*, neut. *slatko* ; the noun *redak* (row, line) has gen. sing. *retka*, and the adjective *redak* (rare, sparse) has fem. *retka*. In these words the change has become necessary because a 'moveable *a*' has dropped.

Exercise : Give the feminine of *nizak*, *gladak*, and the genitive singular of *vrabac* (sparrow), *Šabac* (a town in Serbia). All these words have a 'moveable *a*' in their second syllable.

D and *t* usually disappear before *c*, *č*, and *dž*: the genitive singular of *otac* and *sudac* (judge), in each of which a 'moveable *a*' will have dropped, are *oca* and *suca*.

When a 'moveable *a*' drops from an adjective whose masc. sing. ends *-stan*, the *t* also drops: *bolestan* (ill), fem. *bolesna*.

Exercise: Give the nom. pl. of the following nouns, which have a 'moveable *a*' in their last syllable: *početak* (beginning), *ostatak* (remainder); and the feminine of: *radostan* (joyful), *žalostan* (sad), *koristan* (useful).

DISAPPEARANCE OF *l* AT THE END OF WORDS, AND MORE NOTES ON 'MOVEABLE *a*'

In most words which originally ended *-l*, this consonant has become *-o*, as in *beo* (white), *ceo* (whole)—originally *bel*, *cel*.¹ This change has only taken place in those forms of the word which would otherwise end *-l*, i.e. in the masculine nominative singular, and in the masculine accusative singular of an adjective qualifying an 'inanimate' noun; thus the genitive singular of these adjectives is *belog(a)*, *celog(a)*; fem. sing. *bela*, *cela*, etc.

Where this final *-l* was preceded by the vowel *o*, the *l* has only dropped, as in *sto* (table), declined: *sto*, *stola*, *stolu*, etc.; plural *stolovi*.

As certain groups of consonants are not tolerated in Serbo-Croat at the end of words, in some words a 'moveable *a*' separates a final *-l* from a consonant immediately preceding it; this *a* remains even when the *l* has become *o*, as in *posao* (job, masc.), declined: *posao*, *posla*, *poslu*, etc.; plural *poslovi*. The feminine noun *misao* (thought), which had similarly ended in the consonant *-l*, is declined like *stvar*: *misao*, *misli*, *misli*, *misao*, *misli*, *misli* (*mišlju*), *misli*; plural *misli*, etc.

In adjectives such as *topao* (warm), again the final *-o*

¹ In the *ije*-dialect the nominative masculine singular of these and some similar words may end *-io* or *-ijel*, e.g. *bio*, *bijel*.

represents an earlier *-l*, and the *a* is 'moveable'. The genitive of the masculine singular is therefore *toplog(a)*; nom. fem. sing. *topla*, etc.

It may now be understood why the active past participle, masculine singular, ends *-o*, instead of *-l* (masc. *imao*, fem. *imala*), and why the 'moveable *a*' is sometimes inserted before this *o* (*mogao*, *mogla*, from *moći*).

In a few words the same change has taken place at the end of a syllable which is not the final syllable; hence *čitalac* (reader) has genitive singular *čitaoca*, and nom. plural *čitaoci*; but genitive plural *čitalaca* (see Lesson VI).

Exercise: Decline: *veseo* (like *beo*); *vo* (ox—like *sto*); *prevodilac* (translator—like *čitalac*).

Concerning the consonant groups which are not tolerated at the end of words it is hardly possible to give definite rules as to which these are, but a good dictionary gives where necessary the genitive singular as well as the nominative singular of masculine nouns, and the masculine and feminine nominative singular of adjectives, and thus shows whether an *a* in the final syllable of the nominative singular of these words is 'moveable' or not, e.g. *vetar* (wind), gen. *vetra*; *tužan* (sad), fem. *tužna*.

Notice the monosyllables such as *pas* (dog, plural *psi*) and *san* (sleep, dream, plural *snovi*), in which the *a* is 'moveable'. 'In a dream' is *u snu*.

VOCABULARY

biftek—steak	đak—schoolboy, pupil
brinuti se, brinem se (ipf.)— to be anxious	francuski—French
činiti (ipf.)—to do	kapak, gen. kapka—shutter
državni—concerned with the State	korak—step, stride
	miting—meeting

odlazak, gen. odlaska—depart- ure	prepoznati, prepoznam (pf.) —to recognise
odličan, fem. odlična—excel- lent	prihvatiti—to accept
oštar, fem. oštra—sharp	radost (f.)—joy, pleasure
pekmez—jam	razlog—reason
	uspeh—success
	vojska—army

Read and translate : 1. Njegovi razlozi su bili dobri, i radnici su ih prihvatili s radošću. 2. Zašto niste rekli majci da je njena sestra bolesna? Bojala sam se da će se brinuti. 3. Vojnici su prešli preko mosta brzim koracima. 4. — Zbogom, oče — rekla je Marija i izišla žalosno iz sobe. 5. U kojoj knjizi ste videli retke slike iz Jugoslavije? 6. Naši psi vole da se kupaju u reci samo kad je voda topla. 7. Pitam se da li je zadovoljna svojim najnovijim uspesima. 8. Da li će razgovarati o državnim poslovima na mitinzima? 9. Prevodioci francuskih romana imaju dosta posla, jer ima (there are) mnogo čitalaca za takve knjige. 10. Vojniče, da li ste našli svoje ime u ovim člancima? 11. Počeci svih zadataka su dosta teški. 12. Više volim da sečem hleb oštrijim nožem. 13. Kapci na ovim prozorima nisu dosta jaki; već su slomljeni. 14. Šta će činiti ovi siromasi posle odlaska vašeg dobrog oca? 15. Imamo dva stola, ali samo pet stolica: gde će svi đaci sedeti?

Translate : 1. Your reasons aren't clear to me. 2. The steaks which we ate in that restaurant were excellent. 3. In that poem you read about a cottage with green shutters. 4. He always speaks at these meetings with the greatest courage. 5. Will you give something to these poor men? They're ill. 6. 'Good morning, Colonel,' I said to him as soon as I saw him. 7. Is the wound on her arm or leg? 8. You won't be able to recognise her in the picture in this book. 9. He came into the room with rapid strides. 10. The soldiers in their army are all very strong men. 11. There were ¹ many readers

in the library, and their books were lying on all the tables.
12. We live in Šabac now and rarely return to Belgrade.
13. 'Father,' he said, 'is this mother's ticket or yours?'
14. This jam is called *slatko* in Serbo-Croat because it is very sweet.
15. Do you think that these sentences have been very difficult?

1. There were—*bilо je*.

LESSON XIX

THE CONDITIONAL. LETTER WRITING

Corresponding to both ' I should (*or* would) read ' and ' I should (*or* would) have read ', Serbo-Croat has only *ja bih čitao*—composed of the aorist tense of *biti*¹ and the active past participle of *čitati*. The full forms of the aorist of *biti* are :

(ja) bih (literally ' I was ', ' I have been ')
 (ti) bi
 (on, ona, ono) bi
 (mi) bismo
 (vi) biste
 (oni, one, ona) biše

Shorter forms of this tense are often used in forming the conditional, just as shorter forms of auxiliary verbs are used in forming the compound past tense and the future tense ; though the restrictions applied to the use of the full forms of these auxiliary verbs are not applied to the use of the full forms of *bih*, etc. The short forms are alike for almost every person : *bih, bi, bi, bi, bi, bi*.

The Conditional is, then, usually :

ja bih čitao (čitala)	<i>or</i> čitao (čitala) bih
ti bi čitao (čitala)	čitao (čitala) bi
on bi čitao	čitao bi
ona bi čitala	čitala bi
ono bi čitalo	čitalo bi

¹ Apart from this use of the aorist of *biti* you will not need to use the aorist tense.

mi bismo (<i>or</i> bi) čitali (čitale)	čitali (čitale) bismo (<i>or</i> bi)
vi biste (<i>or</i> bi) čitali (čitale)	čitali (čitale) biste (<i>or</i> bi)
oni bi čitali	čitali bi
one bi čitale	čitale bi
ona bi čitala	čitala bi

A question is usually introduced by *da li* if no other interrogative word introduces it: *da li bih bio?*—should I be? (*or* should I have been?); *da li bi (ona) čitala?*—would she read? (*or* have read?); *koliko bi (or biste) platili?*—how much would you pay? (*or* have paid?); *ko bi to verovao?*—who would have believed it?

The negative is: *ja ne bih čitao or ne bih čitao*—I should not read (*or* I should not have read); *oni ne bi bili (or ne bi bili)*—they would not be (*or* they would not have been).

As shown before, questions in the negative form are often introduced by *zar* (instead of *da li*)—a conjunction which suggests a note of surprise: *zar ne bi vaš sin prihvatio poziv?*—wouldn't your son really accept the invitation? *zar ne bi došao?*—do you mean to say he wouldn't come?

The short forms of the aorist of *biti* are enclitic, and the rules of word order applying to other enclitic verbs apply here too: *ja bih mu ga dala*—I (f.) would give it to him; *ja mu ga ne bih dala*—I wouldn't give it to him (although *ne* and *bih* are separate words the word order is the same as for sentences containing *nisam* and *neću*); *on bi mi ga dao*—he would give it to me; *on mi ga ne bi dao*—he wouldn't give it to me.

The appropriate imperfective and perfective aspects of the verb are, of course, used in the conditional: *on bi došao (pf.) možda jedanput, ali ne bi dolazio (ipf.) često*—he would come perhaps once, but he wouldn't come often; *ona bi pročitala (pf.) kratku pripovetku, ali ne bi čitala (ipf.) romane*—she would read a short story, but she wouldn't read novels.

The conditional may be used, as in English, to denote repeated or habitual action: *on bi govorio celo vreme*—he would talk the whole time.

The request: *Would you . . . ?* is generally ‘*hoćete li . . . ?*’ with an infinitive (or *da* and the present tense): *would you pass me a roll ?—hoćete li mi pružiti zemičku ?* But one may also use the conditional: *da li biste zatvorili prozor ?—would you close the window ?* *Da* followed by the conditional may mean ‘in order that’: *došao je da bi razgovarao s njom*—he came in order that he might talk with her.

VOCABULARY

poznati, poznam (pf.)—to
know, recognise
slagati se, slažem se (ipf.)—
to agree

strašno—frightfully
više voleti, volim (ipf.)—to
prefer
zauzet—occupied, busy

Translate: 1. *Ja ne bih želeo da idem s njim.* 2. *Da li bismo videli more sa vašeg prozora ?* Bismo. 3. *On bi bio veseliji u Parizu.* 4. *Da li bih mogla putovati brzim vozom ?* 5. *Ja ga ne bih poznao.* 6. *Bilo bi bolje da ostanemo u ovom hotelu.* 7. *Zar ne bi pristao da čeka nekoliko minuta ?* 8. *Znam da se ne bi slagala s ovim predlozima.* 9. *Da li biste vi verovali ono što mi je kazao ?* Bih. 10. *Mogla bih da ga pozovem, ali da li bi došao ?* Ne bi.

1. You wouldn't be able to hear his voice. 2. They would like to stay there. 3. I know that she would not come. 4. He would learn more quickly, but he's very busy. 5. Would you prefer to write to me? 6. I'd never speak to him again. 7. I really couldn't carry that bag; it's frightfully heavy. 8. You wouldn't recognise her in her new coat. 9. I wouldn't agree with his suggestion. 10. Would you tell the doctor your name, please?

CONDITIONAL CLAUSES

In order to decide what tense to use in a clause introduced by 'if', it is necessary to distinguish between 'real' and 'unreal' conditions. A 'real' condition expresses something which actually may happen, or may have happened: I'll see him if he has come (it is implied that he may or may not have come); I'd see him if he should come (he may or may not come). An 'unreal' condition is purely hypothetical: I should see him if he were here (implying that he isn't); I should have seen him if he had come (implying that he had not come).

The tense of the verb of the main clause, or first part, of each of the above sentences will be the same as in English.

'If' when introducing a 'real' condition is *ako*, and the tense of the verb in this clause will be the same as in English.

'If' when introducing an 'unreal' condition is *da*, and the tense of the verb in this clause will be either the present tense or the compound past tense, according to the sense.

The sentences given above are, then :

'Real' condition : Videću ga, ako je došao.

Video bih ga, ako bi došao.

'Unreal' condition : Video bih ga, da je ovde.

Video bih ga, da je došao.

'If' may be *kad* followed by the conditional in the 'if-clause' of an 'unreal' condition with a present meaning: pevao bih kad bih imao lep glas—I'd sing if I had¹ a nice voice (*or* pevao bih, da imam lep glas).

When the present tense with a future meaning is used in English in the 'if-clause' of a 'real' condition the future perfect tense (see p. 134) is generally used in Serbo-Croat: I'll see him if he comes: videću ga ako bude došao.

Notice that an 'unreal' condition may be negative: I'd be

¹ See footnote 1, p. 120.

happier if she weren't ¹ here : bio bih srećniji da nije ona ovde.

When English 'if' means 'whether', *da li* must be used : do you know if he will come ? Znete li da li će doći ?

VOCABULARY

društvo—society, company	produžiti (pf.)—to go on, continue
poziv—invitation	rado—gladly
poznanik—acquaintance	sneg—snow
pozvati, pozovem (pf.)—to invite	šiti, šijem (ipf.)—to sew
preseliti se (pf.)—to move house	zar ne ?—isn't it so ?

Read and translate : 1. Zar ne bi bilo bolje da pođemo na stanicu da je dočekamo ? 2. Vi biste želeli pivo, zar ne ? 3. Da ste došli na vreme, čuli biste početak predavanja. 4. Preselili smo se u Zagreb, da bismo bili sa svojim poznanicima tamo. 5. Ako se vaš otac slaže s ovim predlozima, onda je sve u redu. 6. Turisti su se popeli na vrh brda da bi videli more. 7. Dok je ona šila on bi joj čitao naglas. 8. Ako bi sutra pao sneg ostao bih kod kuće. 9. Da ne bi opet morao ručati blizu takvog društva, koje samo nedeljom dolazi, on je danas ostavio varoš.² 10. Da sam primio vaše pismo ne bih očekivao da ćete doći.

Translate : 1. If you come you'll certainly see him. 2. If he were here with us I know that he wouldn't want to return to London. 3. If the train is quicker why did you travel by car ? 4. She would certainly understand him better if she were to see him more often. 5. I'd like to listen ('I would gladly listen') if his voice were more beautiful. 6. We should arrive at the river if we went on by this road. 7. Would you have

¹ These English verbs are only *apparently* past tenses : in fact they are subjunctives, and as they have a present meaning the Serbo-Croatian verb must be in the present tense.

² Quoted from the Serbian writer Ljubomir Nenadović.

accepted the invitation if you had believed that her son was ill? 8. You would have been very tired if you had been with us. 9. If she comes please will you call me? 10. If you knew what I read in the paper this morning!

LETTER WRITING

A letter beginning in English 'Dear John', 'Dear Father', 'Dear Mr. Petrović', 'Dear Mrs. Pavlović', will begin similarly in Serbo-Croat: 'Dragi Jovane,' 'Dragi oče,' 'Dragi gospodine Petroviću,' 'Draga gospođo Pavlović.' (Remember to use the vocative case.) Concluding a letter, 'Voli te' or 'Voli Vas' (followed by your signature, which may be preceded by *Vaš* or *Vaša*) corresponds to 'Yours affectionately'. Slightly more formal is 'Srdačno Vas pozdravlja Vaš (or Vaša)' or 'Mnogo srdačnih pozdrava', followed by your signature. These mean 'Cordially greets you, Your . . .' and 'Many cordial greetings'. Notice that in letters *Vi*, *Vas*, and *Vam(a)* are written with initial capital letters. Writing to someone whom you do not know very well, or to whom you would like to convey your special esteem, you will begin: 'Poštovani gospodine Petroviću,' 'Poštovana gospođo Pavlović.' In business letters the surname is omitted: 'Poštovani Gospodine,' 'Poštovana Gospođo.' Such letters may end: 'S poštovanjem'—'With respect.'

VOCABULARY

okup—gathering (na okupu— assembled)	Uskrs—Easter
porodica—family	uz—up, along, along with, besides (with acc.)
potvrditi (pf.)—to confirm	večera—supper, dinner
praznik—holiday	zadovoljstvo—satisfaction, pleasure
prihvatati (ipf.)—to accept	zahvalan, zahvalna—grateful
provesti, provedem, proveo (pf.)—to spend (time)	zahvaljivati, zahvaljujem (ipf.)—to thank
rezervacija—reservation	

Read and translate :

Dragi gospodine Petroviću,

Zahvaljujem Vam na pismu i pozivu da provedem sa Vama i Vašom porodicom nedelju dana o Uskrsu. Prihvatam poziv sa velikim zadovoljstvom. Poći ću u petak, u 3.30 posle podne. Biću kod Vas oko 6 sati. Bio bih Vam zahvalan ako biste poslali Jovana da me dočeka na stanici, jer ću imati mnogo prtljaga.

Nadam se da će cela porodica biti na okupu o praznicima.

Srdačno Vas pozdravlja,
Milan Popović.

Direktoru hotela „ Dalmacija “,
Dubrovnik.

Poštovani Gospodine,

Molim Vas da rezervirate sobu sa dva kreveta u Vašem hotelu za moju ženu i mene. Ostaćemo u Dubrovniku od 2-og do 23-eg jula. Uz sobu želimo doručak i večeru, a nedeljom i ručak.

Biću Vam zahvalan ako potvrdite ovu rezervaciju što pre.

S poštovanjem,
Jovan Jovanović.

LESSON XX

THE IMPERATIVE AND PROHIBITIONS. FURTHER
NOTES ON NOUN DECLENSIONS

IMPERATIVE

The imperative is formed by adding endings of the following two types to the stem of the present tense :

Type 1 : -j	Type 2 : -i (2nd person singular)
-jmo	-imo (1st person plural)
-jte	-ite (2nd person plural)

Endings of Type 1 are taken by verbs with the vowel *a* in the endings of the present tense, and by verbs in which the stem of the present tense ends *-j* : i.e. these endings are taken by all verbs with the present tense ending (1st person singular) *-am*, *-jim*, or *-jem* :

pevam (I sing) :	pevaj !—sing (thou) !	pevajmo !—let's sing !	pevajte !—sing !
pijem (I drink) :	pij !	pijmo !	pijte !
čujem (I hear) :	čuj !	čujmo !	čujte !

All other verbs take the endings of Type 2 :

govorim (I speak) :	govori !	govorimo !	govorite !
pišem (I write) :	piši !	pišimo !	pišite !

The *n* of the present ending *-nem* sometimes drops in the imperative, e.g. *sednem* (I sit down) : *sedi ! sedimo ! sedite !*

Note the following imperative forms, in which the consonant changes explained in Lesson XVIII have taken place :

reci ! (recimo, recite)—say !	vuci !—pull !	lezi !—lie down !
pomozi ! (from pomoći, pomognem, pomogao, pomogla)—help !		

The imperative of *biti* (to be) is : *budi, budimo, budite.*

Exercise : Give the imperative of : *dati* (pres. *dam*), *uzeti* (*uzmem*), *voziti* (*vozim*), *verovati* (*verujem*), *kazati* (*kažem*), *čekati* (*čekam*).

The 1st person sing. and pl. of the present tense preceded by the conjunction *da* may also have the sense of an imperative : *da vidim!*—let me see ! *da sednemo!*—let's sit down !

The 3rd person singular or plural of the present tense preceded by *neka* also expresses an imperative : *neka ostane ovde*—he's to stay here, *or* let him stay here ; *neka čekaju*—they're to wait, *or* let them wait.

The imperative of the verb *pustiti* may be used in similar sentences : *pustite ga da govori*—let him speak.

The appropriate aspect of the verb must be used in the imperative, e.g. ' *skinite kapu* ' (pf.) means ' take off your cap ' (once) ; ' *skidajte kapu* ' (ipf.) means ' take off your cap ' (generally, always, regularly).

Exercise : Translate : let's go ; let them sing ; let us hear ; let me write ; he's to sit down ; let him wait.

As shown in the previous chapter, the 2nd person, singular or plural, of the present tense of the verb *hteti*, followed by the interrogative particle *li* and an infinitive, expresses a request : *hoćeš li doći?*—wilt thou come ? *hoćete li mi dati tu knjigu?*—will you give me that book ?

PROHIBITIONS

There are two ways of expressing a prohibition.

The imperative may be preceded by *ne* : *ne govori!*—don't speak !

Or (a less abrupt prohibition) the verb *nemoj*, *nemojmo*, *nemojte*, corresponding to the English ' don't (thou), ' let's not ', ' don't (you) ', may be used, followed (as in English) by an infinitive : *nemoj trčati!*—don't run !. *nemojmo misliti*

o tome—let's not think about that ; *nemojte gledati!*—don't look !

The aspect of the verb in prohibitions is usually imperfective. Common exceptions are *zaboraviti* and *dopustiti*.

Exercise : Form brief prohibitions with the following verbs : *ići*, *govoriti*, *učiti*, *zaboraviti*, *doći*, *svirati* (to play an instrument).

FURTHER NOTES ON NOUN DECLENSIONS

Nouns with the ending *-in*, denoting men of certain nationalities, professions, and other categories, drop this ending in the plural before adding the plural endings : *građanin* (citizen), pl. *građani*.

Exercise : Decline : *Srbin* (a Serb), *Ciganin* (a gypsy), *Beograđanin* (a native of Belgrade).

Ok (eye) and *uho* or *uvo* (ear) are neuter in the singular, and declined like *selo*, but their plurals, *oči* and *uši*, are feminine and declined as follows : *oči*, *očiju*, *očima*, *oči*, *oči*, *očima*, *očima*.

VOCABULARY

<i>ćutati</i> , <i>ćutim</i> (ipf.)—to be silent	<i>nemoguće</i> —impossible
<i>eto!</i> —there ! (voila !)	<i>nezavisan</i> , <i>nezavisna</i> —independent
<i>grbača</i> —spine	<i>odjednom</i> —suddenly
<i>jastuk</i> —cushion, pillow	<i>odsečno</i> —abruptly, curtly
<i>k</i> , <i>ka</i> —to, towards (with dat.)	<i>oglas</i> —announcement, personal advertisement
<i>kajati se</i> , <i>kajem se</i> (ipf.)—to regret	<i>paziti</i> (ipf.)—to take care, pay attention
<i>koleno</i> —knee	<i>plemenit</i> —noble
<i>mir</i> —peace	<i>pogreška</i> —mistake
<i>nazeb</i> —cold in the head	

pokloniti se (pf.)—to bow	smetati (ipf.)—to disturb (with dat.)
pomalo—a little	
poslušati (pf.)—to listen; obey	smeti, smem (ipf.)—to dare, be allowed
predlagati, predlažem (ipf.)— to suggest	spreman, spremna—ready, prepared
predložiti (pf.)—to suggest	stalno—constantly
pričati (ipf.)—to tell, relate	tužiti se (ipf.)—to complain
razbijati, razbijam (ipf.)—to break, smash	vladalac (gen. vladaoca)— ruler
razbiti, razbijem (pf.)—to break, smash	zaboleti, zaboli (pf.)—to hurt, begin to ache
savet—advice	zaseban, zasebna—separate
saviti, savijem (pf.)—to bend	život—life
skidati (ipf.), skinuti, skinem (pf.)—to take off, remove	

Read and translate :

1. Molim vas, **hoćete** li mi **pružiti** taj jastuk ? Hvala. Sada **budite** dobri pa **sedite** mirno i **čitajte** ; **nemojte** **govoriti**, jer sam vrlo **zauzeta** ; **verujte** mi, imam mnogo posla danas. **Slušajte** ! Mislim da je **gospođica** Ilić **napolju**. **Otvorite** vrata : neka uđe. Dobar dan, **gospođice** ! **Dođite** k meni. **Hoćete** li **sesti** ovde ? **Pazite**, to je moja knjiga. Sad **ćutite** dok ja pišem, a posle **pričajte** mi sve što ste **činili** danas.

2. **Poslušajte** me ! **Budite** miran građanin, **skidajte** kapu svakom koji je ma i malo ¹ viši od vas ; **naučite** da se i dublje **poklonite** ; **naučite** se da **pomalo** i **kolena** **savijete**, pa kad vas **grbača** **zaboli** ² **nemojte** se **tužiti**, već ³ **kažite** svakom da je to od **nazeba**. **Velikim** ljudima **nemojte** istinu u oči ⁴ **govoriti**, a najmanje smete tu **pogrešku** učiniti prema **vladaocima** i ženama. **Budite** uvek spremni da **kažete** vladaocu da je plemenit, i ženi da je lepa. U **novinama** **čitajte** samo **oglase**. Eto, to vam je moj savet, **radite** tako i vi se **nećete** **kajati**.

(Branislav Nušić.)

1. *ma i malo*—even only a little. 2. . . . *kad vas grbača zaboli*. *Boleti* (ipf.) and *zaboleti* (pf.) take the accusative case : *boli me glava*—my head aches ; *boli me zub*—I have toothache. 3. *već* or *nego* (‘but’) are used when a strong contrast of ideas is presented, and usually follow a negative, e.g. *neću biti u hotelu nego u svojoj kući*. 4. . . . *u oči*—‘to their face’.

Translate :

‘Tell me,’ I said to her. ‘Is life more peaceful for you¹ now that you live with the colonel’s wife?’

‘No,’ she replied abruptly. ‘Listen. Would you say that life was peaceful if you lived with a woman who is constantly telling you : do this ; don’t do that ; bring me my book ; shut the door ; don’t forget that the cat is in the garden ; let me see what you’re reading ; don’t forget to go to the post office² this afternoon ; pass me my cigarettes, please ; take care—don’t smash that cup ? It’s worst of all³ when she suddenly says : “Talk to me !” What would you do if you were in my place?’²

‘I don’t know. I’d probably say : “If you want me to stay in this house give me a separate room, where I can work in peace,² and please don’t disturb me when I want to study.”’

‘But what shall I do if she answers : “All right, if you’re not contented here, go !”?’

‘Be independent. Look for a flat for yourself and leave her.’

‘Don’t suggest that. You know that it’s impossible.’

1. For you : dative (without preposition). 2. The preposition *na* is used with *pošta*, *mesto*, and *mir*. 3. It’s worst of all : *najgore je*.

LESSON XXI

PASSIVE PARTICIPLES AND VERBAL NOUNS

Passive participles are used less often than in English because the passive voice is less used. Where in English one might say: 'the man was bitten by the dog' it would be more natural in Serbo-Croat to put it: 'the dog bit the man'—though the order of the nouns might be the same as in the English sentence: *čoveka je ujeo pas*. As *čoveka* has the accusative ending there can be no doubt as to which bit which. We have also noted (p. 79) that a verb may be used reflexively where the passive voice is used in English.

But passive participles do frequently occur, and many are in such common use that they may be regarded as adjectives. All are declined like adjectives, agreeing with the noun to which they refer; and the past tense is often already implicit in the participle itself; so that whereas in English one says: *I was born*, Serbo-Croat has: *Ja sam rođen (m.) or rođena (f.)*.

Passive participles are formed from the infinitive stem of verbs of either aspect.

Most verbs with infinitive ending *-ati* have passive participle ending *-an*:

pisati: *pisan, pisana, pisano*—written.

zvati: *zvan, zvana, zvano*—called.

pozvati: *pozvan, pozvana, pozvano*—invited.

opravdati: *opravdan, etc.*—justified.

Most verbs with infinitive ending *-iti* and *-eti* have passive participle ending *-jen*; the consonant *j* 'softens' the final consonant of the stem:

učiniti: *učinjen, učinjena, učinjeno*—done.

slomiti: *slomljen, etc.*—broken.

hvaliti : *hvaljen*, etc.—praised.

kazniti : *kažnjen*, etc.—punished.

videti : *viden*, etc.—seen.

Verbs with infinitive ending *-ti* preceded by a consonant have passive participle ending *-en* :

krasti (from *krad-ti*) : *kraden*¹—stolen.

pečí (from *pek-ti*) : *pečen*²—baked.

Verbs with infinitive ending *-nuti* have passive participle ending *-nut* :

podignuti : *podignut*, *podignuta*, *podignuto*—raised ;

prekinuti : *prekinut*—interrupted.

Verbs with infinitive ending *-eti* and present *-mem* or *-nem* have passive participle ending *-et* :

preduzeti (to undertake ; pres. *preduzmem*) : *preduzet*, etc.—undertaken.

prokleti (to curse ; pres. *prokunem*) : *proklet*, etc.—accursed.

Give the passive participles of : *kuvati* (to cook), *slikati* (to paint, take photo), *brijati*, *prihvatiti*, *pustiti* (see p. 110), *svršiti*, *voleti*, *plesti* (to plait, knit, from *plet-ti*¹), *seći* (from *sek-ti*),² *naviknuti* (to accustom),³ *početi*.

The five groups given above represent the commonest forms of passive participle ; but some exceptions to these rules should be noted. Verbs with infinitive ending like *prostreti* (or *prostrti*)—to spread, usually have passive participle ending *-t* : *prostrt*, *prostrta*, *prostrto*. Verbs whose infinitive consists of two syllables, or of two syllables preceded by a prepositional

¹ The present tense (*kradem*, *pletem*) gives the clue to the consonant which formerly preceded the infinitive *-ti* ending.

² See p. 109 (Lesson XVIII).

³ Followed by *na* and the accusative case : to accustom (somebody) to . . .

prefix, vary; e.g. *čuti*—to hear—has *čuven* (which has acquired the meaning of ‘famous’); *dati* has *dan*, but *prodati*—to sell—may have *prodat* or *prodan*, and *udati* (se)—to marry (of a woman)—has *udata*: *ona je udata*—she is married (c.f. *ona se udala*—she got married); *liti*—to pour—has *lit*, *lijen* or *liven*, and *viti*—to wind—has *vit* or *vijen*: *razviti*—to develop: *razvijen*. A good dictionary will give the passive participles which are in common use.

Verbal nouns are formed from passive participles by suffixing *-je* to the masculine form, when the usual ‘softening’ of the preceding consonant will take place: *zvanje*—calling, vocation; *opravdanje*—justification; *do viđenja*—au revoir (‘until the seeing’); *preduzeće*—undertaking, enterprise. You will not often need to form verbal nouns yourself, as you will find them in the dictionary, but this will help you to recognise them.

VOCABULARY

(Note: new words occurring in these and subsequent reading passages taken from Yugoslav authors which are not given in the individual vocabularies will be found in the General Vocabulary, p. 187.)

boja—colour	kao—as
cipela—shoe	končić (diminutive of <i>konac</i>)
crven—red	—little thread
divan—couch, divan	kosa—(head of) hair
fini—fine	marama—scarf
Francuskinja—Frenchwoman	nemati—not to have (negative of <i>imati</i>) ¹
kakav, kakva—some kind of (in questions: what kind of?)	ni—not even
	obojiti (pf.)—to dye

¹ Used only in the infinitive and the present tense. In compound tenses *imati* with a negative auxiliary verb must be used.

obrve (f. pl.)—eyebrows
osim—except, besides (with
 gen.)
postaviti (pf.)—to put, place
prebaciti (pf.)—to throw
 across
predsednik—president
preko—across (with gen.)

sazidati (pf.)—to build
sem (see *osim*)
rukavica—glove
ukrasti, ukradem, ukrao,
ukrala (pf.)—to steal
upravnik—director, manager
vešt—skilful
zidati (ipf.)—to build

Read and translate :

1. Hteo sam posetiti ministra pravde, ali on nije bio u zemlji. Otišao je u inostranstvo da proučava škole za gluvonemu decu.¹ Kako ta stvar, kao vrlo važna, nije mogla trpeti odlaganja, odmah su preduzeti najnužniji koraci. Sem toga što je poslat ministar pravde da proučava uređenje takvih škola, sa vrlo velikim dodatkom uz platu, odmah je postavljen upravnik škola a već je početo zidanje velike zgrade koja je namenjena za stan upravnikov.

Radoje Domanović (1873–1908).

¹ See p. 140.

2. U vrhu sale, na jednom uzvišenom divanu, između dva velika prozora, kao kakav predsednik, jedna mlada Francuskinja prebacila je nogu preko noge i sedi. Sve su haljine ¹ na njoj crvene. Rukavice, marama, cipele: sve je od najcrvenije boje. Nakit na glavi, oko vrata, na rukama, samo su fini crveni korali. Nijednoga končića što se ² na njoj vidi nema ³ od druge boje. Osim toga, njena lepa kosa i obrve obojene su najfinijom crvenkastom bojom tako vešto, da bi svaki rekao da je s takvom kosom rođena.

Ljubomir Nenadović (1826–95). Adapted.

1. The enclitic form of the present tense of 'to be' is sometimes placed between an adjective and noun occurring at the beginning of a sentence. This need not be imitated

2. See p. 79. 3. The genitive is generally used with *nema*—'there isn't', 'there aren't'.

Translate : 1. Were your gloves always (of) this colour ? No, they're dyed. 2. He was born on the 5th November, 1920. 3. I believe these things have been stolen. 4. Don't look at this picture : it isn't finished. 5. I found five broken cups in this cupboard ; do you know who broke them ? 6. He has been sent abroad to study the organisation of the best hotels. 7. Have the most necessary steps already been taken (say 'undertaken') ? 8. The houses on the coast aren't built yet ; building hasn't even been begun. 9. Au revoir, Mr. Petrović ; we'll see each other tomorrow. 10. If they have been invited to lunch with your parents will you go too ?

LESSON XXII

OTHER TENSES. THE VERBS *TREBATI* AND *MORATI*. SOME IMPERSONAL EXPRESSIONS

THE AORIST

This tense is seldom used in the spoken language, but writers often use it in narrative. It is a past tense denoting a completed action, and verbs in the aorist are therefore usually perfective. It is formed by adding the following endings to the infinitive stem :

	Singular	Plural
1st person	-h	-smo
2nd „	-	-ste
3rd „	-	-še

The vowel preceding the *-ti* ending of the infinitive of the verb will take the place of the dashes, e.g. (from *pisati*) *pisah* (I wrote, I have written), *pisa*, *pisa*, *pisasmo*, *pisaste*, *писаše* ; (from *početi*) *počeh*, *poče*, *poče*, *počesmo*, *počeste*, *počeše* ; (from *učiti*) *učih*, *uči*, *uči*, *učismo*, *učiste*, *učíše* ; (from *čuti*) *čuh*, *ču*, *ču*, *čusmo*, *čuste*, *čuše*. When the *-ti* ending of the infinitive is preceded by a consonant, as in *krasti* (from *krad-ti*), *plesti* (from *plet-ti*), *tresti*, to shake (from *tres-ti*), *seći* (from *sek-ti*), *moći* (from *mog-ti*),¹ the vowel *o* is supplied before all the aorist endings, but the 2nd and 3rd person singular end *-e* : *kradoh*, *krade*, *krade*, *kradosmo*, *kradoste*, *kradoše*. The consonant changes *k* to *č*, *g* to *ž*, *h* to *š* explained

¹ The final consonant of the stem of infinitives ending *-sti* with present tense *-dem* or *-tem* (*krasti*, *kradem* ; *plesti*, *pletem*) were originally *d* or *t* respectively ; that of infinitives ending *-sti* with present tense *-sem* (*tresti*, *tresem*) was *s*. The consonant ending the stem of the 3rd person plural of the present tense of verbs with infinitive ending *-ći* was originally that of the infinitive : *seći*, pres. *sečem*, *sečeš*, *seče*, *sečemo*, *sečete*, *seku* (see p. 109).

on p. 109 will take place in the 2nd and 3rd person singular of the aorist of these verbs, i.e. before the vowel *e*: *sekoh*, *seče*, *seče*, *sekosmo*, *sekoste*, *sekoše*. Some verbs with infinitive ending *-ati*, e.g. *imati*, *znati*, *ostati*, *morati*, have alternative aorist forms: *imadoh*, *imade*; *znadoh*, *znade*, etc. *Dati* has only *dadoh*, *dade*, etc., and *hteti* has only *htedoh*, *htede*, etc. *Ići* has aorist *ido*, *ide*, etc., but forms of this verb with a prepositional prefix which ends in a vowel, e.g. *ući*, *naći*, have aorist endings of the type *uđoh*, *uđe*; *nađoh*, *nađe*.

THE IMPERFECT

This tense must be mentioned although it is very rarely used now, either in literature or in the spoken language. Verbs with infinitive ending *-ati* add the following personal endings to the infinitive stem: *-ah*, *-aše*, *-aše*, *-asmo*, *-aste*, *-ahu*, e.g. (from *pisati*): *pisah* (I was writing), *писаše*, etc. These are the endings for the imperfect tense of all verbs; but where verbs have infinitive ending *-iti*, *-eti*, *-uti* the endings of the imperfect tense are preceded by *j*, which 'softens' a preceding consonant, e.g. (from *nositi*) *nošah*, *nošaše*, etc.; and verbs having the infinitive stem ending in a consonant have imperfect tense endings *ijah*, etc.; e.g. (from *plesti*, originally *plet-ti*): *pletijah*, *pletijaše*, etc. Here the consonant changes *k* to *c*, *g* to *z* and *h* to *s* take place before the vowel *i*, e.g. *peći* (*pek-ti*) has imperfect tense *pecijah*, *pecijaše*, etc. The imperfect of *biti* is: *bejah* or *beh*, *beše*, *beše*, *besmo*, *beste*, *behu*; and of *ići*: *iđah*, *iđaše*, etc.

THE FUTURE PERFECT

A compound tense formed from the perfective present tense of *biti* (to be): *budem*, *budeš*, etc., and the active past participle is used to express an action preceding another which is in the future tense, e.g. *kad bude došao u London on će vas videti*: when he comes (will have come) to London he will see you.

MORATI AND TREBATI

Morati means 'to be obliged', 'to have (to)', and may be followed by *da* and the present tense, or by the infinitive: *moram da se žurim*—I must hurry; *moram priznati*—I must admit; *morao sam da idem na poštu*—I had to go to the post; *moraću ostati ovde*—I'll have to stay here; *morao bih da predam prtljag*—I'd have to register the luggage. The negative, *ne moram*, means 'I need not': *ne mora da mu kaže sve što je čuo*—he needn't tell him everything he has heard.

Trebati means 'to be necessary', and is generally used as an impersonal verb, i.e. with the pronoun 'it' understood as its subject: *treba da idem*—it's necessary that I go (I must go); *treba mi dve poštanske marke*—I need two stamps. The negative, *ne treba*, usually means 'it's wrong to', e.g. *ne treba krasti*—one mustn't steal. ('It's not necessary' is 'nije potrebno'.) The conditional, *trebalo bi*, usually means '... ought to ...', e.g. *sada bi trebalo da tražite nekoga koji bi razgovarao s vama na srpskohrvatskom*—now you ought to look for someone who would talk with you in Serbo-Croat. The compound past tense, *trebalo je*, usually means '... ought to have ...', e.g. *trebalo je da mi pišu unapred*—they ought to have written to me beforehand; *nije trebalo to da uradite*—you ought not to have done that. The active past participle will of course always be neuter singular.

OTHER IMPERSONAL EXPRESSIONS

Valja, another verb used impersonally, means 'it's worth while', or sometimes 'it's right': *valja učiti strane jezike*—it's a good thing to study foreign languages. *Ne valja* has the same meaning as *ne treba*: *ne valja to da kažete*—you ought not to say that; whereas *ne vredi* (also impersonal) means 'it's not worth while': *ne vredi da dođete*—it's not worth while for you to come.

Other impersonal expressions are : *žao mi je što*—I'm sorry that ; *šteta je što*—it's a pity that ; *milo (or drago) mi je što*—I'm glad that. (The conjunction *što* is often used instead of *da* after expressions of emotion : *žalim što*—I'm sorry that ; *radujem se što*—I'm pleased that.) *Moguće je da*—it is possible that ; *verovatno je da*—it is probable that ; *sme se, or slobodno je*—one may. (*Smeti*, pres. *smem*—to dare, to be allowed, is also used as a personal verb : *da li smem?*—may I ?)

'I am cold' is '*zima mi je*' or '*hladno mi je*' (but 'I am hungry' is a personal expression : '*gladan sam*').

Ima—there is, there are, and *nema*—there isn't, there aren't, may be used with the genitive singular or plural : *ima li hleba?*—is there any bread ? ; *nema mesta*—there's no room (place) ; *nema pisama*—there are no letters. The nominative singular may also be used after this impersonal *ima* : *ima jedna crkva u ovome selu*—there's one church in this village ; *ima li stolica za mene?*—is there a chair for me ?

In the past and future tenses, and in the conditional, the appropriate tenses of *biti* (to be) are generally used impersonally with the sense of 'there was', 'there will be', 'there would be' : *nije bilo hleba, biće hleba, ne bi bilo hleba*—there wasn't any bread, there will be some bread, there wouldn't be any bread.

VOCABULARY

balkon—balcony	krevet—bed
činovnik—official, clerk	kucati (ipf.)—to knock, tap
hladan, hladna—cold	led—ice
inače—otherwise	mrak—darkness
izgledati (ipf.)—to seem, appear	naglo—suddenly
iznenaditi (pf.)—to sur- prise	naočari—spectacles
	napred—forward ; come in !

neočekivan—unexpected	ugledan, ugledna—distinguished, eminent
nos—nose	upitati (pf.)—to ask
nositi (ipf.)—to carry, wear	upoznati (pf.)—to recognise
oduševljen—enthusiastic	uraditi (pf.)—to do
poručiti (pf.)—to order, send for	usna—lip
poseta—visit	uzviknuti, uzviknem (pf.)—to shout
stranac (gen. stranca)—foreigner	zakucati (pf.)—to knock, tap
tek što—as soon as, the moment that	zbuniti (pf.)—to embarrass, confuse
	zima—cold ; winter

Read and translate :

1. Tek što sam zatvorio vrata za sobom začuh kucanje na vratima.

— Napred ! — rekoh.

U sobu uđe gospodski obučen čovek, s naočarima na nosu. Pokloni se duboko (što i ja, razume se, uradim) i predstavi se kao viši činovnik iz ministarstva.

— Drago mi je ! — rekoh iznenađen ovom neočekivanom posetom.

— Vi ste prvi put sada u našoj zemlji, gospodine ? — upita me.

— Prvi put.

— Vi ste stranac ?

— Stranac.

— Došli ste nam kao poručeni, verujte ! — uzviknu taj viši činovnik oduševljeno.

Mene to još više zbuni.

(Domanović. Continued in Lesson XXIV.)

2. (This extract is in the *ije*-dialect.)

Nađoh staricu u velikoj starinskoj postelji. Ležala je s glavom na jaštuku. Sve je na njoj bilo tužno i umorno, samo

su joj se usne smiješile.¹ Kad je pozvah, ona me ne ču. Njena ruka mi se pričini studena kao led. Ja se nečega pobjah; pomislih da će doskora biti mrak, i da ne mogu dugo uz nju ostati. I naglo se na nešto odlučih. Izadoh, jurnuh niz stube, potrčah kući. Rekoh roditeljima što se sad zbiva u kući s balkonom. Majka dađe svakome od nas da nešto nosi. Pohitasmo svi skupa k starici.

Vladimir Nazor (1876–1949).

1. *e*-dialect: smešile.

Exercise: Re-write the above passages using the compound past tense where Domanović and Nazor have used the aorist.

Translate: 1. You ought to knock on the door before you go into the room. 2. I'm glad he called out 'come in!' otherwise I'd have gone away. 3. You must be well dressed and wear spectacles if you want to look like a distinguished old man. 4. Is this place free? May I sit here? 5. He says he is pleased that he'll be going (he'll go) abroad, although it's quite unexpected. 6. You needn't introduce her to me; we've already met each other. 7. She'll have to bring a pillow if she wants to sleep on that bed. 8. I must admit that the view from your balcony is lovelier than from ours. 9. You mustn't stay here (any) longer. 10. I'll have to go in; I'm cold; my hands are (as) cold as ice.

LESSON XXIII

MORE NOTES ON NOUNS. COLLECTIVE
NUMERALS

MASCULINE NOUNS

Instead of regular plural forms, *brat* and *gospodin* have feminine singular 'collective' forms: *braća* (brothers) and *gospoda* (gentlemen, Sirs), declined like *žena*. Although adjectives and participles agreeing with these nouns must be feminine singular, the verbs of which they are the subjects are plural: *moja braća putuju*—my brothers are travelling; *ova gospoda su bila u Engleskoj*—these gentlemen have been in England. (The word *gospodin* is used more freely than the word 'gentleman' is in English.)

Some masculine nouns have genitive plural ending *-i* instead of the usual *-a*. The commonest of these are *sat* (hour), *mesec* (moon, month), *ljudi* (men, people): ¹ *pet sati*—5 o'clock; *dvanaest meseci*—12 months; *devet ljudi*—9 men.

FEMININE NOUNS

Some nouns are feminine in form though masculine in meaning, e.g. *sluga* (servant), *vođa* (leader), *gazda* (proprietor), *pismonoša* (postman). These are declined like *žena*. Adjectives qualifying them in the singular are masculine, but in the plural feminine: *dobar sluga*; *dobre sluge*.

Besides *majka* (mother) and *kćerka* (daughter), which are declined regularly, the following forms are often used:

	Singular		Plural	
Nom.	<i>mati</i>	<i>kći</i>	<i>matere</i>	<i>kćeri</i>
Gen.	<i>matere</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>matera</i>	<i>kćeri</i>
Dat.	<i>materi</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>materama</i>	<i>kćerima</i>
Acc.	<i>mater</i>	<i>kćer</i>	<i>matere</i>	<i>kćeri</i>

¹ See p. 88, footnote.

	Singular		Plural	
Voc.	mati	kćeri	matere	kćeri
Instr.	materom	kćeri (kćerju)	materama	kćerima
Loc.	materi	kćeri	materama	kćerima

Noga (foot, leg) and *ruka* (hand, arm) have genitive plural *nogu*, *ruku*.

A number of feminine nouns with nom. sing. ending *-a* have gen. pl. ending *-i* instead of the usual *-a*. These are nouns with a stem ending in two consonants but without a 'moveable *a*', e.g. *bomba* (bomb), gen. pl. *bombi*; *borba* (struggle), *funta* (pound), *pomorandža* (orange), *radnja* (shop), *senka* (shade), *tajna* (secret), and nouns ending *-anka*, such as *Muslimanka* (Moslem woman). (Cf. *pesma*, gen. pl. *pesama*.¹)

Grudi and *prsi* (chest, breast) are always plural; they are feminine, and are declined like the plural of *stvar*, but *prsi* has gen. pl. *prsiju*.

NEUTER NOUNS

Dete (child), which is declined in the singular like *dugme* (see p. 20), has no regular plural form, but a feminine singular 'collective' form: *deca*. Like *braća* and *gospoda* this takes a plural verb, but fem. sing. adjective or participle: *mala deca su pevala*—the little children were singing.

Some neuter nouns denoting young creatures have as their plural a feminine singular 'collective' form ending *-ad*, declined like *stvar*, e.g. *jagnje* (lamb)—*jagnjad* (lambs), *unuče* (little grandson)—*unučad*. Again, these fem. sing. collectives take a plural verb but a fem. sing. adjective or participle. Many of them have alternative, more regular, plural forms.

The neuter singular collective noun *lišće* corresponds to English 'foliage', though it is more frequently used than 'foliage' is, as the plural of 'leaf'. *Lišće* takes a singular

¹ See p. 29.

verb, with neuter singular adjective or participle, e.g. *lišće je zeleno*—the foliage is green. *List* also has a regular plural *listovi*, used when the leaves are considered as individual objects rather than as a mass. Other similar neuter singular collective nouns are: *cveće* (from *cvet*—flower); *granje* (*grana*—branch); *drveće* (*drvo*—tree); *kamenje* (*kamen*—a stone, rock).

Kola, *vrata*, *leđa*—cart or car, door, back (of a body), are neuter plural nouns with singular meaning: *vrata su otvorena*—the door is open.

The declension of *oko* (eye) and *uho* (ear) was given in Lesson XX. *Pleće* (shoulder) may take regular neuter plural endings or the plural endings of feminine nouns like *stvar*, i.e. *pleći*, etc.

Podne (noon) and *doba* (time, period) are neuter singular indeclinable nouns.

Veče (evening), which also has a form *večer* which may be either masculine or feminine, is declined: *veče, večera, večeru, veče, večerom, večeru*. The feminine form *večer* is declined like *stvar*, and either form has only one plural: *večeri*, fem., like *stvari*.

COLLECTIVE NUMERALS

Serbo-Croat has three types of 'collective' numerals.

1. Corresponding roughly to the English nouns 'pair' (or 'couple'), 'trio', etc., referring to people or other living creatures, are the neuter forms: *dvoje, troje, četvero, petoro, šestoro, sedmoro, osmoro, devetoro, desetoro, jedanaestoro*, etc. These 'neuter singular collective numerals' are generally used instead of the cardinal numerals given in Lesson XIV when referring to people or other living creatures if both male and female are represented; they take a singular verb, and the pronoun or noun which they qualify is always in the genitive plural: *troje nas (gen. pl.) je čekalo u gostionici*,

dok je petoro pošlo da traži gazdu—three of us (men and women) waited in the inn, while five went off to look for the proprietor. 'We two' (m. and f.) is *nas dvoje* (again *nas* is genitive plural). These neuter singular collective numerals are often used with *deca*, e.g. *troje dece*—three children; *sedmoro dece*—seven children; and although *braća*—'brothers' are all boys or men, these collective numerals whose corresponding cardinal numerals take the genitive plural may be used with this noun: *osmoro braće*, but *dva brata*. As *ljudi* may mean 'people' or 'men', *šestoro ljudi* means '6 people' (both sexes), and *šest ljudi* means '6 men'.

The neuter singular collective numerals are not declined in the modern language: *sa šestoro dece*—with 6 children.

2. Very similar to these in form are collective numerals which have adjectival form, and agree, as adjectives, with the nouns which they qualify: *dvoji, dvoje, dvojica*; *troji, troje, trojica*; *četvori, četvoro, četvorica*; *petori*, etc., *šestori, sedmori, osmori, devetori, desetori*, etc. These must be used with those nouns which have only plural forms in common use, e.g. *trojica vrata*—three doors; *petore novine*—five newspapers; *u dvojim novinama*—in two newspapers. They may also be used with nouns denoting things which occur in pairs, e.g. *troje čarape*—three pairs of stockings (instead of *tri para čarapa*).

3. Collective numerals ending *-ica*, which may be regarded as feminine nouns: *dvojica, trojica, četvorica, petorica, šestorica*, etc., are used only to refer to men. Instead of *dva čoveka* one can simply say *dvojica*. The verb following these collective numerals is plural, but participles may be feminine singular or masculine plural: *dvojica su došla or došli*. They are generally used when the men to whom they refer have already been mentioned: *opazio sam pet vojnika*; *dvojica su dolazili prema meni, ali trojica su pobegli u šumu*—I noticed 5 soldiers; two were coming towards me, but 3 ran away

into the forest. They may all be followed by a masculine noun in the genitive plural, e.g. *petorica Engleza su putovali sa mnom*—5 Englishmen travelled with me.

All three types of collective numerals have equivalents of English 'both': Type 1 has *oboje*, Type 2 *obadvoji*, *obadvoje*, *obadvoja*, etc., and Type 3 *obojica*.

Notice that it is only cardinal numerals (Lesson XIV) which must necessarily be followed by either the genitive singular or genitive plural according to whether they are 2 to 4, 5 to 20, etc.

VOCABULARY

<i>bol</i> (pl. <i>bolovi</i>)—pain	<i>neprijatelj</i> —enemy
<i>izgorjeti, izgorim</i> (pf.)—to burn out, be burned down	<i>slikati</i> (ipf.)—to paint, to photograph
<i>koncerat or koncert</i> —concert	<i>živ</i> —alive; lively
<i>mnogi</i> —many (with pl.); many a (with sing.)	

Read and translate: 1. U ovoj sobi ima dvojica vrata: jedna vode u kupatilo, a druga u hodnik. 2. Ko su ona gospoda? Video sam ih juče s vašom braćom. 3. Uzmite šest pomorandži i dajte ih onoj deci. 4. Je li istina da imate sedmoro braće? 5. Jest. Trojica su lekari, kao i moj otac, a četvorica su činovnici. 6. U pozorištu ih je bilo šestoro: dve glumice i četiri glumca. 7. Nas dvojica smo ostali do kraja koncerta. 8. Svake nedelje kupuju četvore novine; mislite li da ih čitaju? 9. Pitajte onu četvoricu studenata kako se zovu. 10. Neprijatelj je bacio deset bombi, od kojih je izgorelo nekoliko velikih radnji.

Translate: 1. Did you say I'd need five hours, five days, five weeks or five months to learn all these new words? 2. 'Gentlemen,' he said, 'may I introduce my brothers to you?' 3. She could paint the flowers, leaves and branches on the trees if she were here now. 4. Do you feel the pain in

your chest or in your back ? 5. They would have 8 children—5 sons and 3 daughters—if their eldest son were alive. 6. There were (*bilo je*) at least ten men in the cart ; two were singing but many were silent. 7. I've seen this advertisement in 3 newspapers. 8. We four will wait here while you two go and (to) look for him. 9. Don't stand at (*na*) the door ; you'll be cold. 10. I hoped to talk (that I shall talk) Serbo-Croat with the two Yugoslavs in our compartment, but they both knew English much better than I knew their language.

LESSON XXIV

GERUNDIVES. **KOGOD, KO GOD, ETC.**

The present gerundive—the verbal adjective which in English has the ending *-ing*—can be formed only from imperfective verbs, and has the form of the third person plural of the present tense with *-ći* suffixed, e.g. *gledati* has *gledajući*, *govoriti* has *govoreći*, *seći* (pres. *sečem*, 3rd pers. pl. *seku*)—*sekući*. A few of these present gerundives are commonly used as adjectives, e.g. *idući* (from *ići*), which literally means ‘going’ has also acquired the meaning of ‘next’: *iduce godine*—next year; *tekući* (from *teći*—to flow), literally ‘flowing’, also means ‘current’.

The past gerundive (e.g. English ‘having sent’) is little used in speech. It is formed from verbs of either aspect. The *-ti* of the infinitive ending is dropped and *-vši* (occasionally only *v*) added; verbs whose infinitive ending *-ti* is preceded by a consonant take *-avši*: *primiti*—*primivši*; *gledati*—*gledavši*; *videti*—*videvši*; *metnuti*—*metnuvši*; *tresti*—*tresavši*; *pečti* (*pek-ti*)—*pekavši*. The past gerundive of *ići* is *išavši*; that of its compounds is similar, e.g. *doći*—*došavši*. *Bivši*, from *biti*, is in common use, meaning ‘the former’, e.g. *bivši predsednik*—the former president.

With the exception of the few gerundives, present and past, which are in common use and which may be declined as adjectives (definite, with ‘soft’ stems), as in the phrase ‘*iduce godine*’ above, or ‘*video sam bivšeg predsednika*’, the gerundives may only be used to refer to a noun in the nominative case, and they do not change if this noun is feminine or neuter or plural: the actress came down the stairs singing loudly—*glumica je sišla niz stepenice, pevajući glasno*. Here *pevajući* refers to *glumica*, but retains its *i* ending. Again: having put the books on the table she sat down and began to

read—metnuvši knjige na sto, sela je i počela da čita. (In English there is a preference for the present gerundive, and this sentence might be : putting the books, etc. But Serbo-Croat is more precise in this respect.)

As these gerundives can only refer to nouns in the nominative case they cannot be used in sentences such as 'I heard the actress singing', where 'singing' refers to 'the actress' (accusative case). This sentence must be 'čuo sam glumicu kako peva'—'I heard the actress how (or as) she sings'. *Gde* may be used instead of *kako*: we saw him coming—videli smo ga gde dolazi. Notice that the verb after *kako* or *gde* is always imperfective in such sentences.

Kogod, ko god, etc.

The pronouns *ko* and *što* with *-god* suffixed have the meaning of 'someone' and 'something' when 'some' is slightly emphasised in English: *kogod će sigurno doći*—someone will surely come; *dajte mu što god*—give him something.

When *ko*, *što* and certain other words are followed by *god* as a separate word they have the meaning of 'whoever', 'whatever', etc.: *ko god je to rekao, ja to ne verujem*—whoever said that, I don't believe it; *činiću što god je moguće*—I'll do whatever is possible. (Notice that the stress accents in *kogod* and *ko god* happen to coincide with those of their English equivalents: *someone* and *whoever*.) *Koliko god* means 'however much'—*uzmite koliko god hoćete*—take as much as you like. *Kakav god*—whatever kind of; *gde god*—wherever. These words have a similar meaning when they are preceded by *ma* instead of being followed by *god*: *ma ko*—whoever; *ma šta* (not *što*!)—whatever; *ma gde*—wherever.

The prefix *i-* corresponds to an emphasised 'any': *da li će iko doći?*—will anyone come?

VOCABULARY

izlog—display, e.g. in shop window	požuriti (pf.)—to hurry
kelner—waiter	rad—work
ličnost—person, personage	uskočiti u (pf.)—to jump in
odelo—suit, clothing	tramvaj—tramcar
odjednom—suddenly	zaustavljati (ipf.)—to stop, bring to a halt
posmatrati (ipf.)—to watch, observe	žurno—hastily

Read and translate :

1. Imamo još jedno prazno mesto za konzula. Tu biste imali dobru platu i dobre dodatke, što biste vi, razume se, trošili na svoje lične stvari. Vi ste star, iskusan čovek, a dužnost vam je laka. Već više od mesec dana mučimo se tražeći pogodnu ličnost za taj važan položaj. Koje ste vi narodnosti, ako smem pitati ?

— Pa ja, upravo, kako da vam kažem, i sam još ne znam — rekoh zastidjen, ali me je on prekinuo pljesnuvši oduševljeno dlanom o dlan.

— Prekrasno, prekrasno ! Nikad bolje ! Vi ćete tek moći savesno vršiti ovako važan zadatak. Odmah idem ministru, a za nekoliko dana možete poći na put ! — izgovori viši činovnik, i odjuri da saopšti svome ministru važno otkriće.

(Domanović, continued.)

2. Tek što smo seli, kelner odmah pritrča, donese nam jelovnik na francuskom jeziku, i upita : Šta želite jesti ? Moj drug i ne uzimajući kartu u ruke reče : » Supu i tako dalje «. Kelner ga pogleda, kao da bi hteo znati šta on razume pod time „ i tako dalje “. Ali ne dobivši nikakva objašnjenja, okrenuo se k meni sa istim pitanjem. Ja mu odgovorih : » Donesite i meni isto «. Kelner ode. U dnu bašte, odakle se jelo donosi, razgovarao se malo s gazdaricom ; po svoj

prilici savetuje se šta će nam posle supe doneti. Oni su bili radoznali šta smo mi pod tim „i tako dalje“ razumevali; a mi smo radoznali kako će oni to razumeti, i šta će nam doneti.

Dobro smo učinili što smo tako kelneru kazali, jer on nam je izabrao mnogo bolji ručak nego da smo mi birali. Prekrasno svojstvo moga druga da za ručkom ¹ ništa ne govori, bilo mi je već poznato. Ručali smo brzo i slatko. Kelner donese nam račun ćuteći; mi mu platismo ćuteći.

(Nenadović.)

3. Marko ² dođe u Beograd. Kola, tramvaji, ljudi, sve to juri, žuri; činovnici žure u kancelariju, radnici za svojim radom.

Sretne jednog uglednog, lepo obučenog gospodina. Priđe mu Marko i pozdravi ga. Onaj je bio malo zbunjen; bi ga stid od Markova loša odela.

— Ja sam Marko Kraljević. Došao sam amo da pomognem svojoj braći — reče Marko i ispriča sve: kako je došao, zašto je došao, šta je sve bilo s njim, i šta misli dalje raditi.

— Ta-ako. Milo mi je što sam vas upoznao, g. Kraljeviću! Baš mi je milo, verujte; ali izvinite me, žurim u kancelariju! — reče onaj i ode žurno.

Marko sretne drugog, trećeg. Koga god sretne, tako se mahom svrši razgovor sa onim: Žurim u kancelariju! Marko ide ulicama i ćuti; ne zaustavlja nikog, ne pita nikog ništa. A i kog će više pitati? Koga god vidi, žuri u kancelariju.

(Domanović.)

¹ za ručkom: at luncheon.

² Marko Kraljević. The satirical short story from which this extract is taken describes how this semi-legendary hero returns to Belgrade. Notice that Domanović uses sometimes the 'historic' present and sometimes a past tense.

Translate: 1. Hastily greeting (having greeted) him, I jumped into the tram. 2. She went slowly along the street, stopping in front of every shop window. 3. Having finished his work in the office he hurried home. 4. Watching him writing I suddenly remembered where I had seen him earlier. 5. Whoever you met, I can't believe she is an important person. 6. Wherever you are you must not wear such old clothes. 7. I'm glad they told us that we could take as much as we liked, for I'm hungry. 8. Look at him running along the street! He's probably hurrying home. 9. Having read the menu we called the waiter. 10. I stood in the street watching the people coming and going.

LESSON XXV

A SUMMARY OF THE USES OF THE CASES

Only uses of the cases without prepositions are discussed here ; the Locative Case, which is used only after prepositions, is therefore omitted.

Nominative.

The case of the subject of the sentence, and of nouns, pronouns, and adjectives after the verb 'to be': *njegov sin je bio najmlađi advokat* u Beogradu. For the use of the nominative singular after the impersonal 'ima'—'there is', see p. 136.

Genitive.

1. Of possession : *knjževnost naše zemlje*—the literature of our country ; *život seljaka*—the life of the peasants.

2. Of description : *karta prve klase*—a first class ticket (a ticket of the first class) ; *čovek visokog rasta*—a man of tall stature. The genitive of description is used much more freely than in English, e.g. *ležim otvorenih očiju*—I'm lying with open eyes.

3. Partitive Genitive : *komad sira*—a piece of cheese ; *hoćete li mleka ?*—would you like some milk ? *on nema nikakvih knjiga*—he has no books. For the use of the genitive after *ima* and *nema* used impersonally see p. 136. The genitive is used for the contents of a vessel, etc., when the vessel and its contents are commonly associated with each other : *čaša piva*—a glass of beer ; *šolja čaja*—a cup of tea. (Otherwise *sa* is used with the instrumental case : *kutija sa igračkama*—a box of toys.) The genitive is also used after adverbs such as *mnogo* (much, many), *malo* (a little, few), *nekoliko* (some, several) : *mnogo umornih putnika*—many weary travellers.

4. In time expressions, usually denoting 'time when': *prošloga meseca*—last month; *jednog dana*—one day.
5. As object of a verbal noun: *čitanje knjiga*—the reading of books.
6. Denoting origin: *engleskog porekla*—of English origin.
7. Material: *venac ruža*—a wreath of roses.
8. After *evo* (here is, here are), *eto* (there is, there are—of objects fairly near the speaker) and *eno* (there is, there are—farther away): *evo ga!*—here he is!
9. The genitive is used after many reflexive verbs, e.g. *sećam se vaših roditelja*—I remember your parents. (A list is given in the Appendix.)
10. Sometimes (but very rarely now) the object of a negative verb is in the genitive instead of the accusative.

Dative.

1. The case of the indirect object: *dajte ovo pismo svome ocu*—give this letter to your father.¹
2. The dative is occasionally used to denote direction: *ići kući*—to go home.
3. Indicating possession when the thing possessed, e.g. a relative or a part of the body, is closely associated with the possessor: *majka mu je inteligentna žena*—his mother is an intelligent woman. Notice its use in the poem on p. 9: *zeleni im kapci*. This use of the dative is very similar to the 'dative of advantage or disadvantage': *vetar je seljacima oborio šupe*—the wind overthrew the peasants' huts.
4. In the expressions: *zima mi je, hladno mi je*—I am cold; *vrućina mi je*—I'm hot.
5. The Ethic Dative. The dative of the personal pronoun inserted in certain statements or questions implies a personal interest in the answer: *kako si mi?*—how are you (to me)?

¹ Notice that the reflexive-possessive adjective 'svoj' is used, because the subject (understood) of the imperative verb is 'you'.

6. The dative is used after certain verbs which you might expect to take the accusative : *pretio mi je*—he threatened me. (A list is given in the Appendix.)

Accusative.

1. The direct object : *pišem pismo*—I'm writing a letter. Note that the verb 'boleti'—to hurt, ache, takes an accusative : *boli me glava*—my head aches (the head hurts me) ; *boli me zub* (tooth), etc. Verbs taking two accusatives are rare : *učitelj nas je učio pesmu*—the teacher taught us a song ; *upitao ga je samo jednu reč*—he asked him only one word.

2. Expressions denoting duration of time,¹ extent of space, weight, and value : *celu noć*—the whole night ; *sto je visok jedan metar*—the table is 1 metre high ; *ovo je teško jedan kilogram*—this weighs one kilogram.

3. In the expressions : *strah me je*—I'm afraid ; *stid me je, sramota me je*—I'm ashamed.

Vocative.

Is only used in addressing people, whether you are writing or talking : *dragi gospodine Pavloviću*—dear Mr. Pavlović ; *draga gospođo Pavlović*—dear Mrs. Pavlović ; *Gospodo!*—Gentlemen !²

Instrumental.

1. Denoting the instrument used : *šijem vrlo malom iglom*—I'm sewing with a very small needle ; *ova slika je naslikana rukom*—this picture is painted by hand.³ The use of the instrumental denoting way or direction (after verbs of motion) and manner is very similar to this : *idem ulicom*—I'm going

¹ See p. 104.

² See p. 139.

³ But *N.B.* 'naslikana od moga oca'—'painted by my father' ; though it is better to say 'ovu sliku je naslikao moj otac' (see Lesson XXI).

along the street ; išli su *redom*—they went in turn ; govorite *šapatom* !—speak in a whisper !

2. In expressions of time. See p. 105.

3. In the following expressions : *detetom*—as (i.e. when) a child ; *stotinama*—by the hundred ; *tokom rata*—in the course of the war ; *putem*—on the way ; *delom*—partly (from *deo*—‘ part ’) ; *većinom*—for the most part (from *većina*—‘ majority ’).

4. To denote origin : on je *rodom* (ili *poreklom*) Srbin—he is by birth (or origin) a Serb.

5. After the following verbs which take a direct object, and others with similar meanings : *smatrati*—to consider : *smatram ga poštenim čovekom*—I consider him an honest man ; *nazvati*—to call : *nazvali su ga Vukom*—they called him Vuk ; *učiniti, načiniti, napraviti*—to make : *njegov rad ga je načinio velikim čovekom*—his work made him a great man. *imenovati*—to nominate : *imenovali smo ga predsednikom*—we nominated him president ; *osećati*—to feel, when used reflexively : *osećao sam se mirnim*—I felt calm ; *osećao se junakom*—he felt a hero.

6. After certain verbs where a direct object might be expected. (A list of these is given in the Appendix).

VOCABULARY

ikad(a)—ever

ispratiti (pf.)—to accompany,
see off

kašičica (diminutive of *kašika*
—spoon)—tea-spoon

mašina—machine ; type-
writer

milja—mile

običaj—custom

ogroman, ogromna—enor-
mous

pokazati, pokažem—to show

ponosan, ponosna—proud

poslednji—the last

poslužavnik—tray

pošto—after ; as, since,
because

poznavanje—knowledge, acquaintance	šoljica (diminutive of <i>šolja</i>)— small cup
pravi—real, authentic	tada—then
pravilno—correctly, regularly.	tanjirić (diminutive of <i>tanjir</i> —plate, dish)—little dish
priča—story	tečno—fluently
privlačan, privlačna—attrac- tive	trenutak (gen. trenutka)— moment, second
priznati—to admit, confess	turski—Turkish
svuda—everywhere	udobno—comfortably

Read and translate : 1. Više bih volela da mi piše rukom, ali sva njegova pisma su pisana mašinom. 2. Beograđanin koji je stigao prošle nedelje bio je čovek dugačkog nosa, širokih leđa i crne kose. 3. Molim vas dajte mi jedan kilogram hleba i sto grama sira. 4. Svakog dana viđam istu staricu u varoši. Eno je, i sada ide ulicom. 5. Zima joj je ; ruke su joj hladne kao led. 6. Zapitao sam ga kad će doći, a on mi je odgovorio da će stići do pet sati. 7. Put pored mora je bio dugačak samo jednu milju, ali nije mogao dalje ići jer su ga bolele noge. 8. Već godinama živi u Jugoslaviji i naravno govori srpskohrvatski kao pravi Jugosloven. 9. Žao mi je, draga gospođo, što neću moći da vas posetim, ali subotom i nedeljom uvek posećujem svoju decu. 10. Rekao je da najzad govorim dosta tečno i pravilno ; iako mu nisam verovao, njegove reči su me učinile vrlo srećnim.

Translate : Mr. Simić, in whose house I spent the last 5 days in Belgrade, told me that he usually visited his sister on Sundays ; but as he wanted to take me with him we went to see her on Friday (for I had to return to England, of course, last Saturday). We bought first class tickets and travelled comfortably by train. We were pleasantly surprised when we saw that Miss Simić was waiting for us at the station. I must tell you that she's an extremely attractive woman with

enormous dark eyes like her brother's,¹ and I believe that everybody considers her very intelligent. We went on foot, by way of narrow paths, and arrived in front of the smallest and prettiest cottage that I have ever seen. After we had sat and talked for an hour she left us for a few moments, and came back into the room carrying a tray on which were a little cup of the sweet black Turkish coffee which is drunk everywhere in Yugoslavia, a tumbler of water, a little dish of *slatko* and a tea-spoon. 'Would you like me to teach you this custom of ours?' she asked me, smiling. But I already knew what I had to do. I took a spoonful of the *slatko* (only one—remembering a terrible story of an Englishman who ate it all); holding the spoon in my hand, I took the tumbler with my other hand and drank a little water. Then I placed the spoon in the tumbler, which I then put on the tray, and finally drank the cup of coffee. My knowledge of this little custom (on account of which, I must admit, I was rather proud) surprised them both, and still more my knowledge of their language. 'You must come again next year,' they said, 'and stay with us longer. Then nobody will think that you're not a real Yugoslav.' Miss Simić accompanied us to the station half an hour later, and whenever I remember that day I see her standing on the platform and hear her saying to me: 'Come again next year! Happy journey! Goodbye!'

¹ Use *kao u* with the genitive of 'her brother'.

APPENDIX

I. KEY TO SENTENCES AND PASSAGES FOR
TRANSLATION INTO SERBO-CROAT ¹

Page 12.

1. Putujemo brzo. 2. Čitam kad jedem. 3. Učimo polako i pažljivo. 4. Peva glasno i veselo kad radi. 5. Ne stanujete ovde. 6. On ne razume kad govorim. 7. Rade ovde ali spavaju kod kuće. 8. Govorimo polako. 9. Dobro čitate. 10. Pevamo kad radimo, ali ne pevamo suviše glasno. 11. On uvek govori. 12. Zimi sedimo kod kuće. 13. Oni obično putuju leti. 14. Ne pušim. 15. On često ustaje rano. 16. Obično sede ovde. 17. Govorite suviše brzo. 18. Ne pišete. 19. On radi a oni gledaju. 20. Ustajem.

Page 18.

1. Dobro jutro, gospodine Petroviću! 2. Pišemo lekaru. 3. Gospodin Pavlović je lekar. 4. On piše romane. 5. Studenti sede na podu i puše. 6. Šećer je u čaju. 7. On ne voli gradove. 8. On ne ide u Beograd bez pasoša. 9. Gde je Jovan? 10. Sedi blizu prozora i čita. 11. Pijemo čaj bez šećera. 12. Putujem u Zagreb sa gospodinom Petrovićem. 13. Putujemo vozom. 14. Gledaju konja. 15. On daje pasoš gospodinu Pavloviću. 16. Zašto ne sedite? 17. On uvek putuje brodom. 18. Zbogom, Jovane. 19. Gde je grad? 20. Ne razumem jezik. 21. Oni ne puše u bioskopu. 22. Nemaš šećera. 23. Bregovi su blizu grada. 24. Ne vidim Jovana na brodu. 25. Studenti ne slušaju: oni spavaju.

¹ Your word order in the early sentences and passages may differ from that given here, without being incorrect. The rules for word order which must be observed are given in those Lessons where it becomes necessary to apply them.

Page 22.

1. Tražimo restoran. 2. Gde je profesor ? 3. On peva u kupatilu. 4. Ne mogu da razumem kad govorite. 5. Vino je sa pivom u ormaru. 6. Obično provodim proleće i leto blizu jezera. 7. Gledaju konje u poljima. 8. Tražim ogledalo. 9. Ne mogu da pišu bez pera. 10. Idemo u pozorište. 11. Oni žele da putuju automobilom na more. 12. Jovan želi da dobro govori jezik. 13. Moram da idem u polja. 14. Ne mogu da radim kad pevate. 15. On je često u pozorištu : voli pozorišta u Londonu. 16. Oni žive u stanu u predgrađu Zagreba. 17. Radimo u selima blizu mora. 18. Mogu da vidim jezera. 19. Dajem detetu komad mesa. 20. On jede komad hleba sa mesom.

Page 25.

1. Ko je Milan ? 2. On je Jugosloven. 3. Da li su u Beogradu ? 4. Ne, nisu ; u Sarajevu su. 5. On nije u automobilu ; ovde je. 6. Ne znamo gde je brod. 7. Ne putujem kad je Jovan u Londonu. 8. On nije lekar. 9. Jesmo li u selu ? 10. Da li su studenti ovde ? 11. Da, ovde su ; oni su sa gospodinom Petrovićem. 12. Da li ste Jugosloven ? Ne, nisam. 13. Vi niste Hrvati. 14. Znam da su ovde. 15. Da li je Jovan sa lekarom ? Jest.

Page 27.

Razgovor u vozu

- Nemate dosta mesta.
- Ne, nemamo. Imamo suviše prtljaga.
- Možete metnuti kofer tamo gore.
- Dobro. Sada je u redu.
- Vrlo dobro govorite. Jeste li Jugosloveni ?
- Ne, nismo. Mi smo Englezi, ali ovde provodimo mnogo

vremena. Dolazimo iz Dubrovnika i putujemo u Sarajevo, zatim u Beograd.

— Dobro. Možemo putovati zajedno do Sarajeva.

— Da li znate da li možemo da ručamo u vozu ?

— Naravno. U vagon-restoranu.

— Da li znate gde je vagon-restoran ?

— Mislim da je sasvim blizu.

— Sada idem na ručak. A vi ?

— Da. Hajdemo.

Page 31.

1. Čita li on roman ? Ne, čita vesti. 2. Da li gledate slike ? Da ; one su u knjizi. 3. Da li on dobro spava ? Ne, noću uči. 4. Gde su knjige ? Nisu ovde. 5. Da li su na policama ? Ne znam. 6. Mislim da gospođa Petrović zna gde su, te sada tražim godpođu Petrović. 7. Da li razumete kad ja govorim ? Obično razumem kad ne govorite suviše brzo, ali ne razumem gospodina Petrovića. 8. Da li je on Jugosloven ? Da, jest. 9. Da li je gospođa Petrović Engleskinja ? Ne, nije. 10. Gde je ona ? Ona je sa gospodinom Petrovićem. 11. Gde su oni ? Jesu li u kući ili u vrtu ? 12. Mislim da su u vrtu pred kućom. 13. Da li slušate ritam pesme ? Da ; ja volim muziku. 14. Znam da je žena Engleskinja. 15. Da, a muž je, mislim, Jugosloven.

Page 32.

— Gospođa Petrović, gde ste ? Jeste li u kuhinji ?

— Ne, nisam. Ovde sam.

— Gde ? Da li ste u salonu ?

— Da, jesam. Tražim knjigu o Jugoslaviji — knjigu sa slikama. Da li znate gde je ? Stalno gubim stvari.

— Znam da je sa kartama ; mislim da su u fijoci. Imate li ključ, molim ? Hvala. Ne, nisu ovde.

— Gde je Jovan ? Možda on zna gde je.

— Mislim da nije u kući. On obično provodi dan u biblioteci. Zašto gledate kroz prozor ?

— Tražim Jovana. Možda je u vrtu. Da, tamo je. Sedi na travi sa knjigom u ruci.

Page 39.

1. Na žalost, nisam čitao kad sam video profesora u biblioteci. 2. Da li je rekao da radite suviše mnogo ? 3. Ne, naprotiv ; rekao je da moram da radim više. 4. Kafana je bila pred hotelom. 5. Ne mogu da platim za taksi. 6. Kazala je da je Engleskinja. 7. On nije uvek ustajao rano. 8. Niste primetili izgled sa prozora. 9. On je već zaboravio adresu. 10. Nisam razumeo (razumela). 11. Nisam mogao (mogla) da razumem kad su oni govorili. 12. Mi smo već ručali u vozu. 13. Da li ste zaboravili pasoše ? 14. Stigla je avionom. 15. Putnici su gledali bregove i jezera. 16. Crkva je bila blizu hotela. 17. Video (videla) sam hotel kad smo bili u vozu. 18. Jesu li sedeli na stolicama ili na podu ? 19. Oni su samo razgovarali i pušili. 20. Rekao je da voli ritam pesama.

Page 40.

— Šta ste radili kad ste stigli na stanicu ?

— Uzeli smo taksi. Mislili smo da znamo jezik vrlo dobro, ali šofer nije razumeo kad smo govorili. Srećom, razumeo je adresu hotela ; nije bio daleko od stanice. Pružio sam šoferu nešto novca, ali ne znam koliko je uzeo.

— Teško meni ! Vidite da je bolje znati jezik dobro pre nego što putujete po inostranstvu.

— Znam. Ali mislim da nije uzeo suviše, jer je vrlo pažljivo izbrojio novac.

— Dakle, stigli ste u hotel.

— Da, — hotel sa kafanom i parkom. Naravno, nismo mogli da vidimo park noću. Rezervirali smo sobe unapred. Već smo večerali u vozu i samo smo želeli da spavamo, te smo odmah legli, i dugo smo spavali.

Page 47.

1. On ide u pozorište sa mojom sestrom. 2. Ne možete razgovarati sa onim gluvim starim gospodinom. 3. Da li ste primili dobre vesti od svog sina ? 4. Jovanova majka je kupila ovu novu kuću. 5. Obično radimo u svojim sobama. 6. Moram čitati vašu novu knjigu ; čuo (čula) sam da je vrlo zanimljiva. 7. Ona voli da ruča u dobrom hotelu. 8. Kupio je jednu marku za svoje preporučeno pismo. 9. Ove mlade Engleskinje uče naš jezik. 10. Možete videti njihovo selo sa vrha onog visokog brda. 11. To je žena u zelenom kaputu. 12. Ovo je važno pismo. 13. Vi ste zaista vrlo ljubazni, draga gospođo Petrović ! 14. Putovali smo brzim vozom i uskoro stigli na veliku stanicu. 15. Ne volim da živim u velikim gradovima. 16. Poslao (poslala) sam vašu dopisnicu avionskom poštom. 17. Zaista morate videti njegov novi automobil i šofera ! 18. On razgovara sa ljubaznom i učtivom mladom gospođicom. 19. Primili su preporučena pisma od svojih prijatelja u inostranstvu. 20. Da li ste znali da naš stari lekar sada živi u ovom selu ?

Page 49.

Idem na poštu ; mogu uzeti vaše dopisnice, ako hoćete. Šta mislite, da li je bolje da pošaljem svoja pisma avionskom poštom, preporučena ? Naročito su važna i želim da stignu što brže. Zar ne mislite da je ona mlada gospođica u pošti vrlo ljubazna i učtiva ? Ona mi je rekla na srpskohrvatskom, vrlo strpljivo, koliko dana putuju pisma do Engleske običnom poštom i avionskom poštom, kad sam juče tamo kupio ove marke. Ona govori vrlo jasno, i lako sam razumeo kad je rekla koliko moje marke koštaju. Zaboga ! Zaboravio sam da treba da pišem svome advokatu. Molim vas, dajte mi moje pero i list hartije i jedan koverat.

Page 54.

1. On obično stavlja svoje stvari na pod, ali ova važna pisma stavio je u fijoku. 2. Učim pažljivo ali ne mogu reći da sam naučio jezik. 3. Pitam vas da li znate gde su moja pisma. 4. Zapitao (zapitala) sam devojkicu da li zna gde živi lekar. 5. Zamolila je svoju prijateljicu da da šoferu nešto novca. 6. Jedem hleb. 7. Nije mnogo pojeo. 8. Rekla je : molim vas, dajte mi svoj šešir. 9. Ostavljam ove stvari u kući svoje majke. 10. Vaš sin je ostavio svoje knjige u našoj biblioteci. 11. Zar ste zaista bacili onaj lepi šešir u reku ? 12. On uvek baca svoje stare stvari. 13. Vaše dete spava u mojoj sobi. 14. Bili smo umorni i uskoro smo zaspali. 15. Obično ne pijem, ali pre ručka sam popio (popila) jednu čašu vina. 16. Kupio (kupila) sam kovertu a sada kupujem marke. 17. Zamolili su gospodina Nikolića da napiše knjigu o svojim putovanjima. 18. Zar ne dajete mleka detetu ? 19. Moja žena je otišla u radnju da kupi nov kaput. 20. Pišete li pisma ?

Page 60.

Razgovarao sam s drugim putnicima, ali sam bio vrlo umoran jer sam već dugo putovao, i kad su oni izišli iz voza i ja sam bio sam u kupeu, legao sam i zaspao. Spavao sam dok je voz prolazio kroz Austriju, ali kad smo stigli na jugoslovensku granicu kondukter je došao u moj kupe. » Carinik i drugi činovnici dolaze«, rekao je. » Hvala«, odgovorio sam pospano i počeo da otvaram svoje kofere. Međutim, ovo nije bilo potrebno. Kad je carinik došao, samo je pogledao na moj prtljag, rekao : » U redu«, i izišao, iako sam već hteo da kažem : » Imam ovu veliku kutiju cigareta«. Došao je drugi Jugosloven i zatražio moj pasoš. Progovorio je nekoliko reči na srpskohrvatskom i ja sam sve razumeo. I carinik i drugi činovnik bili su vrlo ljubazni i učtivi. Iako je bila noć i bio sam tako umoran, mislio sam da je moje putovanje po Jugoslaviji počelo vrlo prijatno.

Page 67.

1. Kad ćemo stići u Zagreb ? 2. Neću pročitati svoja pisma pre doručka. 3. On će sedeti pod velikom jabukom u našoj bašti posle podne. 4. Metnućemo ovaj telefonski imenik pod ove druge velike knjige. 5. Molim vas, hoćete li poslati ovaj mali paket kad odete na poštu ? 6. Kad će izići iz bioskopa ? Da li obično izlaze kasno ? 7. On će pojesti taj sladoled. 8. Da li će putnici videti ona lepa jezera i planine kad prolaze kroz Sloveniju, ili putuju noću ? 9. Hoće li ovo biti dobra knjiga za njihovog sina ? 10. Ovaj voz će uskoro poći ; obično polazi na vreme. 11. Zar vojnici neće moći da spavaju ovde ? 12. Hoćete li, molim vas, dati ove stvari svojoj sestri ? 13. Nećemo izići iz voza : jugoslovenski činovnici će doći u naš kupe. 14. Zar vaši studenti neće ići na to predavanje ? 15. Da li će profesor napisati članak o knjizi koju je čitao ?

Page 68.

Da li ste gladni ? Ući ćemo u ovaj mali restoran. Moj muž je rekao da će biti ovde ; možda će doći docnije. Gde ćemo sedeti ? Hoćete li vi sedeti na ovu stolicu ? Staviću ovu veliku torbu pod svoju stolicu : da li je to u redu ? Evo jelovnika ; šta ćete vi izabrati ? Sigurna sam da ćete moći da pojedete dosta mesa i povrća posle svog dugog puta ; ali prvo ćemo uzeti supu. Posle ćemo misliti na voće i sir : sir je ovde verovatno dobar. Imamo dosta vremena. Posle nećemo ići peške ; uzećemo taksi i otići u pozorište.

Page 74.

1. Otišao sam da ga tražim ali ga nisam našao. 2. Pevala je divnu pesmu ; da li ste je čuli ? 3. Rekao mi je da neće doći. 4. Zahvalili smo im kad su nas pozvali na ručak, ali smo im rekli da nećemo biti slobodni. 5. Daću mu njenu adresu ; ona je rekla da će mi je dati. 6. On joj je ponudio cigaretu

ali je nije uzela. 7. Gledao sam njegove džepove ; u njima ima mnogo stvari. 8. Eno vašeg kaputa : metnuo sam ga na stolicu. 9. Obećali su nam kod » Putnika « da će nam dati karte sutra. 10. Moj pas neće da ide s njim, ali će možda ići s vama. 11. Ona hoće da nas povede sa sobom. 12. Nisam ga razumeo kad je s njima govorio. 13. Zar vi zaista dajete ovo meni ? 14. Meni nije jasno zašto mu nisu pisali. 15. Rekli su da će nas dočekati na stanici, ali ja ih ne vidim.

Page 75.

Galama na ulici nas je rano probudila i odmah smo ustali. » Ja ću spremi kafu « — rekao mi je Jovan. — » Gde ste je metnuli ? « » Mislim da sam metnuo sve potrebne stvari u vaš kofer. Zar ih niste videli kad ste ga otvorili sinoć ? Evo ih ! Dok je spremate, odlučićemo kuda ćemo ići danas. Imate li vodić ? Molim vas, dajte mi ga. Hvala. Evo slike one lepe crkve ; juče smo je videli, znate, kad smo tamo prolazili. Možda ćemo moći danas da uđemo u nju. Moramo otići i u ovaj muzej.« Čitao sam o njemu naglas dok je Jovan spremao kafu. » Moramo ga posetiti posle podne,« rekao sam mu. On mi je pružio solju. » Ah, ovo je vrlo prijatno ! Sunce sija i kafa je dobra. Popićemo je i izići ćemo da vidimo grad.«

Page 81.

1. Mila se izgubila. 2. Ne znam da li će se vratiti. 3. Nadam se da će me povesti sa sobom. 4. Zašto ste se smejali ? 5. Nisam se smejaio ; samo sam se smešio. 6. Ona se, naravno, boji njega, zbog njegovog strogog lica. 7. » Vina, Milo ! « vikali su kad je Mila služila u kafani. 8. Da li se sećate one noći kad smo se izgubili u onoj tamnoj šumi ? 9. Kupila sam ovu sliku za sebe, zato što sam joj se toliko divila. 10. Srećom, to se ne događa često. 11. Čim je pročitala njegova pisma, ona ih je vratila meni. 12. To se desilo kad smo bili kod vas.

13. Komedija od Marina Držića se daje u pozorištu ; moramo je videti. 14. Šta se govori o ovoj knjizi ? 15. Nisu se često viđali, iako su se mnogo voleli. 16. Automobil se zaustavio pred jednom velikom zgradom i šofer je izišao. 17. On se popeo uz zid, skočio na zemlju i potrčao stazom. 18. Naše malo selo se nalazi na obali. 19. Kako se zovete ? 20. Obradovao sam se kad sam primio dobre vesti o vama.

Page 88.

1. Povešću tri mlade devojke (pet mladih devojaka) sa sobom. 2. Vratio se sa četiri teška paketa (šest teških paketa). 3. Mislim da ste pročitali ova dva važna članka (ovih pet važnih članaka) ; hoćete li mu ih vratiti ? 4. Ona je primila pedeset i jednu čestitku (pedeset i sedam čestitaka) o Božiću ; uvek prima mnogo. 5. Imamo dosta hrane za trideset siromašnih žena (trideset i dve siromašne žene). 6. Kaže da je pročitao sve tri stranice (svih osam stranica) ovog pisma za četiri minuta (četрнаest minuta). 7. Jedan vodič je otišao u muzej sa jedanaest umornih turista. (Dva vodiča su otišli (*or* otišla) u muzej sa dvadeset i dva umorna turista.) 8. Kupaju se u mirnoj vodi ovog jezera triput dnevno (pet puta dnevno). 9. Učim ove reči ; već sam naučio sto novih reči (sto dve nove reči) danas. 10. Da li ste приметили ona dva čoveka (onih šest ljudi) ? Svaki od njih putuje sa tri različita pasoša (pet različitih pasoša) !

Page 92.

1. Desilo se prvog decembra. 2. Koji je (datum) danas ? Mislim da je trideset prvi novembar. 3. Ne može biti ; novembar ima samo trideset dana. 4. Otvorio sam prvih deset koverata ; peti i sedmi su bili prazni. 5. Mnogi srpski junaci su poginuli na Kosovu hiljadu tri stotine osamdeset devete godine. 6. Koliko je sati ? Mislim da je pet i trideset (*or* pet i po ; *or* pola šest). 7. Večerali su u četvrt do osam. 8. Naći

ćete knjigu na trećoj polici; dajte mi je, molim vas. 9. Slušaćemo vesti na radiju u šest sati. 10. Zar nije čudno, ovaj sat uvek stane u ponoć, ili možda u podne; u svakom slučaju u dvanaest sati. 11. Otišao je od kuće u četiri i deset, devetog avgusta, i nije se vratio. 12. Da li ona nosi prsten na trećem prstu leve ili desne ruke? 13. Vi ste prvi na spisku, ja sam drugi, ona je treća a on je četvrti. 14. On se rodio trećeg aprila hiljadu devet stotina četrdeset pete godine. 15. Naša je četvrta kuća u drugoj ulici levo.

Page 99.

1. Pitam se da li je onaj hotel bolji od ovoga. 2. Lakše je čitati nego prevoditi. 3. U Beogradu ima sada većih i lepših zgrada nego pre rata. 4. Zašto ne dolazite češće? 5. Breskve i smokve su svakako ukusnije u vašoj zemlji nego u našoj. 6. On je, očigledno, hrabriji od mene. 7. Mislite li da je srpskohrvatski teži od engleskog? 8. Da li će vaše dve knjige biti skuplje od ovih? 9. Da li su rekli da je on njihov najbolji slikar? Video sam ovde bolje slike od njegovih. 10. Ovde će vam biti mirnije. 11. Med nije slađi od šećera ali je ukusniji. 12. Došli smo vrlo rano, ali oni su stigli još ranije. 13. Kad su je molili da prestane, ona je pevala sve glasnije. 14. Da li je voda dublja ovde nego na tom mestu? Mi više volimo da se kupamo u najdubljoj vodi. 15. Ovde ima najviše saobraćaja zato što je ovo najšira ulica. 16. Govorio je jasnije kad je primetio da sam Englez. 17. Da li su najjeftinije novine najzanimljivije u vašoj zemlji? 18. Ovo platno je grublje, ali, srećom, ja volim grubo platno. 19. Ona je najinteligentnija žena u ovoj kancelariji. 20. Riba u sledećoj narodnoj pesmi svakako je vrlo inteligentna.

Page 106.

1. Ne sećam se imena onoga čoveka koji mi je govorio o vama u utorak. Ko je on? 2. Nadao se da će sresti devojk

koju je video u vozu. 3. Kome ste dali pismo ? 4. Šta je to ? Je li to stranica iz knjige koju ste čitali ? 5. Koga ćemo videti večeras u pozorištu ? 6. Čime je pisao — perom ili olovkom ? 7. S čijim sinom ste razgovarali ? 8. Niko nikada ne živi dugo u ovim kućama. 9. Stidim se ove sobe ; u njoj nije nikada ništa u redu. 10. Čije su bile one stvari koje ste stavljali u fijoku kad sam ušao u sobu ? 11. Ovo je najduže pismo koje sam ikada primio. Neću nikada imati dosta vremena da ga pročitam. 12. Nismo nikoga videli, iako smo bili bliže od vas. 13. Ceo dan ste jeli i pili. 14. Dva mladića s kojima sam se sinoć vratila iz pozorišta, bili su Milan i njegov mlađi brat. 15. Ne možete verovati sve što on kaže ; ono što vam je jutros rekao nije istina. 16. Ko je čovek koga uvek posećujete sredom ? 17. Možete li doći na jedan sat ? Nadam se da ćete stići do četiri i trideset. 18. Nešto strašno se desilo. Izgubili smo novac koji ste nam dali. 19. Da li znate čiji je ovaj stan ? 20. Pitam se o čemu joj je pisao.

Page 114.

1. Vaši razlozi mi nisu jasni. 2. Bifteci koje smo pojeli u tom restoranu bili su odlični. 3. U toj pesmi ste čitali o kućici sa zelenim kaptcima. 4. On uvek govori na tim mitinzima sa najvećom hrabrošću. 5. Hoćete li dati nešto ovim siromasima ? Bolesni su. 6. » Dobro jutro, pukovniče «, — rekao sam mu čim sam ga video. 7. Da li je rana na njenoj ruci ili nozi ? 8. Nećete moći da je prepoznate na slici u ovoj knjizi. 9. Ušao je u sobu brzim koracima. 10. Vojnici u njihovoj vojsci su svi vrlo jaki ljudi. 11. Bilo je mnogo čitalaca u biblioteci, i njihove knjige su ležale na (po) svim stolovima. 12. Sada živimo u Šapcu i retko se vraćamo u Beograd. 13. » Oče «, — rekao je on » — da li je ovo majčina ili tvoja karta ? « 14. Ovaj pekmez se zove » slatko « na srpskohrvatskom, zato što je vrlo sladak. 15. Mislite li da su ove rečenice bile vrlo teške ?

Page 118.

1. Ne biste mogli da čujete njegov glas. 2. Voleli bi da ostanu tamo. 3. Znam da ne bi došla. 4. Učio bi brže ali je vrlo zauzet. 5. Da li biste više voleli da mi pišete ? 6. Nikad više ne bih govorio s njim. 7. Zaista, ne bih mogla nositi tu torbu ; strašno je teška. 8. Ne biste je prepoznali u novom kaputu. 9. Ne bih se složio sa njegovim predlogom. 10. Da li biste rekli lekaru svoje ime, molim ?

Page 120.

1. Ako dođete, sigurno ćete ga videti. 2. Da je on ovde s nama, znam da ne bi želeo da se vrati u London. 3. Ako je voz brži, zašto ste putovali kolima ? 4. Sigurno bi ga razumela bolje kad bi ga češće viđala. 5. Rado bih slušala da je njegov glas lepši. 6. Stigli bismo do reke ako bismo produžili ovim putem. 7. Da li biste prihvatili poziv da ste verovali da je njen sin bolestan ? 8. Bili biste vrlo umorni da ste bili sa nama. 9. Ako ona dođe, hoćete li me, molim vas, pozvati ? 10. Kad biste znali šta sam jutros pročitao u novinama !

Page 127.

— Kažite mi — rekla sam joj — da li vam je život mirniji sada kad živite kod pukovnikove žene ?

— Ne ; — odgovorila je odsečno — slušajte. Da li biste rekli da je život miran kad bi živeli sa ženom koja vam stalno govori : » Uradite ovo, nemojte raditi to ; donesite mi moju knjigu ; zatvorite vrata ; nemojte zaboraviti da je mačka u bašti ; da vidim šta čitate ; nemojte zaboraviti da odete na poštu danas posle podne ; pružite mi, molim vas, cigarete ; pazite, nemojte razbiti tu šolju ! « Najgore je kad odjednom kaže : » Razgovarajte sa mnom ! « Šta biste radili kad biste bili na mome mestu ?

— Ne znam. Verovatno bih rekla : » Ako hoćete da ja ostanem u ovoj kući, dajte mi zasebnu sobu, gde mogu raditi

na miru, i molim vas nemojte mi smetati kad hoću da učim.«

— Ali šta ću raditi ako ona odgovori : » Dobro, ako niste zadovoljni ovde, idite ! « ?

— Budite nezavisni. Tražite stan za sebe i napustite je.

— Nemojte to predlagati. Znaete da je to nemoguće !

Page 132.

1. Da li su vaše rukavice bile uvek ove boje ? Ne, obojene su. 2. Rođen je petog novembra, hiljadu devet stotina dvadesete godine. 3. Verujem da su ove stvari ukradene. 4. Nemojte gledati ovu sliku : nije svršena. 5. Našao sam pet razbijenih šolja u ovom ormaru ; da li znate ko ih je razbio ? 6. Poslat je u inostranstvo da proučava uređenje najboljih hotela. 7. Da li su već preduzeti najpotrebniji koraci ? 8. Kuće na obali nisu još sazidane ; zidanje nije ni početo. 9. Do viđenja, gospodine Petroviću ; videćemo se sutra. 10. Ako su oni pozvani na ručak kod vaših roditelja, da li ćete i vi ići ?

Page 138.

1. Trebalo bi da zakucate na vrata pre nego što uđete u sobu. 2. Radujem se što je rekao » napred«, inače bih otišao. 3. Morate biti lepo obučeni i nositi naočare ako hoćete da izgledate kao ugledan star čovek. 4. Da li je ovo mesto slobodno ? Mogu li sesti ovde ? 5. Kaže da se raduje što će ići u inostranstvo, iako je to sasvim neočekivano. 6. Ne morate da mi je predstavite, već smo se upoznali. 7. Ona će morati da donese jastuk, ako hoće da spava na tom krevetu. 8. Moram priznati da je izgled sa vašeg balkona lepši nego sa našeg. 9. Ne smete ostati ovde duže. 10. Moraću da uđem, hladno mi je ; ruke su mi hladne kao led.

Page 143.

1. Da li ste rekli da će mi trebati pet sati, pet dana, pet nedelja ili pet meseci da naučim sve ove nove reči ?

2. » Gospodo «, rekao je on » mogu li vam predstaviti svoju braću ? « 3. Mogla bi da slika cveće, lišće i granje na drveću da je sada ovde. 4. Da li osećate bol u grudima ili u leđima ? 5. Imali bi osmoro dece — pet sinova i tri kćeri — da je njihov najstariji sin živ. 6. Bilo je najmanje deset ljudi u kolima ; dvojica su pevali, ali mnogi su ćutali. 7. Video sam ovaj oglas u trojim novinama. 8. Nas četvoro ćemo čekati ovde dok vas dvoje idete da ga tražite. 9. Nemojte stojati na vratima, biće vam hladno. 10. Nadao sam se da ću razgovarati srpskohrvatski sa dvojicom Jugoslovena u našem kupeu, ali obojica su znali engleski mnogo bolje nego što sam ja znao njihov jezik.

Page 149.

1. Pozdravivši ga žurno, uskočio sam u tramvaj. 2. Išla je polako ulicom, zaustavljajući se pred svakim izlogom. 3. Završivši rad u kancelariji, požurio je kući. 4. Posmatrajući ga kako piše, odjednom sam se setio gde sam ga ranije video. 5. Koga god ste sreli, ne mogu da verujem da je važna ličnost. 6. Ma gde da se nalazite ne treba da nosite tako staro odelo. 7. Radujem se što su nam rekli da možemo uzeti koliko god hoćemo, jer sam gladan. 8. Gledajte ga kako trči ulicom ! Verovatno žuri kući. 9. Pročitavši jelovnik, pozvali smo kelnera. 10. Stajao sam na ulici gledajući ljude kako (gde) dolaze i odlaze.

Page 154.

Gospodin Simić, u čijoj sam kući proveo poslednjih pet dana u Beogradu, rekao mi je da on obično posećuje svoju sestru nedeljom ; ali pošto je hteo mene da povede sa sobom, otišli smo da je posetimo u petak (jer, razume se, morao sam da se vratim u Englesku prošle subote). Kupili smo karte prve klase i putovali udobno vozom. Prijatno smo se iznenadili kad smo videli da nas gospođica Simić čeka na stanici. Moram vam reći da je ona vrlo privlačna žena, ogromnih crnih očiju,

kao u njenog brata, i verujem da je svi smatraju vrlo inteligentnom. Pošli smo pešice, uskim stazama, i stigli pred najmanju i najlepšu kućicu koju sam ikada video. Pošto smo sedeli i razgovarali jedan sat, ona nas je ostavila na nekoliko trenutaka i vratila se u sobu noseći poslužavnik na kome su bili šoljica slatke, crne, turske kafe koja se svuda pije u Jugoslaviji, čaša vode, tanjirić slatka i jedna kašičica. » Da li biste hteli da vam pokažem ovaj naš običaj ? « upitala me je smešeći se. Ali ja sam već znao šta treba da radim. Uzeo sam kašičicu slatka (samo jednu — setivši se strašne priče o Englezu koji je pojeo sve); držeći kašičicu u ruci, uzeo sam drugom rukom čašu i popio malo vode. Tada sam stavio kašičicu u čašu, koju sam zatim stavio na poslužavnik, i, najzad, popio šoljicu kafe. Moje poznavanje ovog malog običaja (zbog čega sam, moram priznati, bio dosta ponosan) iznenadilo je oboje, a još više moje znanje njihovog jezika. » Morate opet doći iduće godine«, rekli su, i ostati duže kod nas. Tada niko neće misliti da niste pravi Jugosloven «.

Pola sata docnije gospođica Simić nas je ispratila na stanicu, i kad god se setim tog dana, vidim je kako stoji na peronu, i čujem je kako mi kaže : » Dodite opet iduće godine ! Srećan put ! Zbogom ! «

2. VERB LISTS

The following is a list of the commonest of the verbs whose present tense cannot be deduced from their infinitive. It does not, therefore, include verbs with infinitive ending *-iti* (which always have present tense ending *-im*), unless the *i* preceding *-ti* is part of the stem of the verb, e.g. *piti*, *pijem*; nor verbs with infinitive ending *-nuti* (present tense always *-nem*), nor those verbs with infinitive ending *-ovati*, *-ivati* which have present tense ending *-ujem*. Verbs with infinitive ending *-ati* and present tense *-am* are not given. The list consists principally of simple verbs, as their forms with prepositional

prefixes have the same endings in the present tense, e.g. *piti*, *pijem*; *popiti*, *popijem*. For most verbs it has only been necessary to give one aspect, e.g. *kretati*, *krećem* (ipf.) is given, but not its perfective counterpart *krenuti* (present tense obviously *krenem*). Where necessary, the active past participle is also given (for certain verbs both masculine and feminine singular forms). Only the most usual meanings of the verbs have been given, and the list should be used in conjunction with a dictionary.

bdeti, bdim (ipf.)—to stay awake	dobiti, dobijem (pf.)—to get
bežati, bežim (ipf.)—to flee	dobivati, dobivam (ipf.)—to get
biti (see p. 57)—to be	doći, dođem, došao (pf.)—to come
biti, bijem (ipf.)—to beat	doneti, donesem (pf.)—to bring
bojati se, bojim se (ipf.)—to fear	drhtati, drščem (ipf.)—to tremble
boleti, boli (ipf.)—to be painful	držati, držim (ipf.)—to hold
bosti, bodem, bo, bola (ipf.)—to pierce	goreti, gorim (ipf.)—to be burning
brati, berem (ipf.)—to gather, pluck	grejati, grejem (ipf.)—to heat
brisati, brišem (ipf.)—to wipe	grepsti, grebem, grebao (ipf.)—to scratch
crpsti, crpem, crpao (ipf.)—to draw (from), derive	gristi, grizem, grizao (ipf.)—to bite, munch
čuti, čujem (pf. and ipf.)—to hear	hrkati, hrčem (ipf.)—to snore
davati, dajem (ipf.)—to give	hteti (see p. 62)
derati, derem (ipf.)—to tear	hvalisati se, hvališem se (ipf.)—to boast
dići, dignem, digao (pf.)—to raise	ići, idem, išao (ipf.)—to go
disati, dišem (ipf.)—to breathe	iskati, ištem (ipf.)—to demand
dizati, dižem (ipf.)—to raise	

istaći, istaknem, istakao (ipf.) —to project	ležati, ležim (ipf.)—to lie, recline
izabrati, izaberem (pf.)—to choose	liti, lijem (ipf.)—to pour
iznemoći, iznemognem, izne- mogao (pf.)—to become exhausted	maći (maknuti), maknem, maknuo (pf.)—to move
jahati, jašem (ipf.)—to ride (e.g. on horseback)	mesti, metem, meo (ipf.)— to sweep
kajati se, kajem se (ipf.)—to regret, repent	metati, mećem (ipf.)—to put
kašljati, kašljem (ipf.)—to cough	micati, mićem (ipf.)—to move
kazati, kažem (pf. and ipf.)— to say, tell	mirisati, mirišem (ipf.)—to smell
klati, koljem (ipf.)—to slaughter	miti, mijem (ipf.)—to wash
klečati, klečim (ipf.)—to kneel	moći (see p. 21)
kleti, kunem (ipf.)—to curse	mrzeti, mrzim (ipf.)—to hate
klicati, klićem (ipf.)—to applaud	musti, muzem, muzao (ipf.)— to milk
kovati, kujem (ipf.)—to forge (metal)	naći, nađem, našao (pf.)—to find
krasti, kradem, krao (ipf.)— to steal	napeti, napnem (pf.)—to stretch, strain
kretati, krećem (ipf.)—to move	nastojati, nastojim (ipf.)—to endeavour
kriti, krijem (ipf.)—to hide	nazirati, nazirem (ipf.)—to be of opinion
lagati, lažem (ipf.)—to tell a lie	nedostajati, nedostajem (ipf.) —to be lacking
lajati, lajem (ipf.)—to bark	nestajati, nestajem (ipf.)—to disappear
leći, legnem, legao (pf.)—to lie down	nestati, nestanem (pf.)—to disappear
leteti, letim (ipf.)—to fly	nicati, nićem (ipf.)—to ger- minate
	nići, niknem, nikao (pf.)—to germinate

nizati, nižem (ipf.)—to put in a row, string up	oteti, otmem (pf.)—to carry off, seize
njihati, njišem (ipf.)—to swing	otezati, otežem (ipf.)—to drag out, delay
obazirati se, obazirem se (ipf.)—to bear in mind	oticati, otičem (ipf.)—to swell
obući, obučem, obukao (pf.)—to put on (clothes)	otići, otidem <i>or</i> odem, otišao (pf.)—to go away
odbiti, odbijem (pf.)—to reject	pasti, padnem, pao (pf.)—to fall
odlagati, odlažem (ipf.)—to postpone	pasti, pasem, pasao (ipf.)—to graze, pasture
odoleti, odolim (ipf.)—to overcome	peći, pečem, pekao (ipf.)—to bake
odreći, odrečem, odrekao (pf.)—to renounce	penjati se <i>or</i> peti se, penjem se (ipf.)—to climb
odricati, odričem (ipf.)—to renounce	pisati, pišem (ipf.)—to write
odupirati, odupirem (ipf.)—to resist	piti, pijem (ipf.)—to drink
oduzeti, oduzmem (pf.)—to subtract, deduct	plakati, plačem (ipf.)—to weep
okretati, okrećem (ipf.)—to turn	plesti, pletem, pleo (ipf.)—to knit, interweave
orati, orem (ipf.)—to plough	pljuštati, pljušti (ipf.)—to rain heavily
osnovati, osnujem <i>or</i> osnivati, osnivam (ipf.)—to found, establish	pobeći, pobegnem, pobegao (pf.)—to flee
ostajati, ostajem (ipf.)—to remain	pobledeti, pobledim (pf.)—to turn pale
ostati, ostanem (pf.)—to remain	pocrveneti, pocrvenim (pf.)—to blush
oteći, otečem, otekao (pf.)—to swell	početi, počnem (pf.)—to begin
	počinjati, počinjem (ipf.)—to begin

poći, pođem, pošao (pf.)—to start off	poznavati, poznajem (ipf.)—to know
podupirati, podupirem (ipf.)—to support	pozvati, pozovem (pf.)—to invite, summon
podupreti, poduprem (pf.)—to support	prati, perem (ipf.)—to wash
pokazati, pokažem (pf.)—to show	preći, pređem, prešao (pf.)—to cross
poludeti, poludim (pf.)—to go mad	predavati, predajem (ipf.)—to hand over ; teach
pomagati, pomažem (ipf.)—to help	predlagati, predlažem (ipf.)—to suggest
pominjati, pominjem (ipf.)—to mention	preduzeti, preduzmem (pf.)—to undertake
pomoći, pomognem, pomogao (pf.)—to help	preklinjati se, preklinjem se (ipf.)—to swear (e.g. by oath)
poneti, ponem (pf.)—to take, bring	prestajati, prestajem (ipf.)—to cease
popeti se, popnem se (pf.)—to climb	prestati, prestanem (pf.)—to cease
poreći, porečem, porekao (pf.)—to revoke ; deny	presti, predem, preo (ipf.)—to spin ; purr
poslati, pošljem (pf.)—to send	preteći, pretečem, pretekao (pf.)—to overtake ; surpass
postajati, postajem (ipf.)—to become	prevesti, prevedem, preveo (pf.)—to translate
postati, postanem (pf.)—to become	prići, pridem, prišao (pf.)—to approach
postići, postignem, postigao (pf.)—to attain, achieve	pripisati, pripišem (pf.)—to attribute
postojati, postojim (ipf.)—to exist	proći, prođem, prošao (pf.)—to pass
povesti, povedem, poveo (pf.)—to take, lead (a person)	prokleti, prokunem (pf.)—to curse

pronaći, pronađem, pronašao (pf.)—to discover	roktati, rokćem (ipf.)—to grunt
prostirati, prostirem (ipf.)— to spread	rzati, ržem (ipf.)—to neigh
prostreti <i>or</i> prostrti, prostrem, prostřo, prostrla (pf.)—to spread	sadržati, sadržim (ipf.)—to contain
provesti, provedem, proveo (pf.)—to spend (time)	sakriti, sakrijem (pf.)—to hide
prožeti, prožmem (pf.)—to penetrate, permeate	sastajati se, sastajem se (ipf.) —to meet
psovati, psujem (ipf.)—to curse	sastati se, sastanem se (pf.)— to meet
pući, puknem, pukao (pf.)— to burst	sastojati se, sastoji se (ipf.)— to consist (of)
raspolagati, raspoložem (ipf.) —to dispose of, have at one's disposal	sašiti, sašijem (pf.)—to sew together
rastajati se, rastajem se (ipf.) —to part	satrti, satrem, satřo, satrla (pf.)—to crush, pulverise
rastati se, rastanem se (pf.)— to part	saviti, savijem (pf.)—to bend, fold, roll
rasti, rastem, rastao, rasla (ipf.)—to grow	seći, sečem, sekao (pf.)—to cut
rasuti, raspem (pf.)—to spill ; squander	sedeti, sedim (ipf.)—to sit
razbiti, razbijem (pf.)—to smash	sejati, sejem (ipf.)—to sow
razviti, razvijem (pf.)—to de- velop	sesti, sednem (pf.)—to sit down
reći, reknem, rekao (pf.)—to say	sići, siđem, sišao (pf.)—to descend
rezati, režem (ipf.)—to cut, carve	skakati, skačem (ipf.)—to jump, caper
	slagati, slažem (ipf.)—to assemble
	slagati se, slažem se (ipf.)—to agree
	slati, šaljem (ipf.)—to send

- sleći, slegnem, slegao (pf.)—
to shrug (shoulders)
- slegati, sležem (ipf.)—to
shrug (shoulders)
- smejati se, smejem se (ipf.)—
to laugh
- snaći, snađem, snašao (pf.)—
to befall
- spasti, spasem, spasio (pf.)—
to save
- spominjati, spominjem (ipf.)
—to mention
- spotaći se, spotaknem se,
spotakao (pf.)—to stumble
(against)
- sresti, sretnem, sreo (pf.)—to
meet
- srkati, srčem (ipf.)—to sip
- stajati, stajem (ipf.)—to stand
(on)
- stati, stanem (pf.)—to come
to a halt
- steći, stečem, stekao (pf.)—to
acquire
- stezati, stežem (ipf.)—to
tighten
- stići, stignem, stigao (pf.)—to
arrive
- stideti se, stidim se (ipf.)—to
be ashamed
- stizati, stižem (ipf.)—to
arrive
- stojati, stojim (ipf.)—to be
standing
- strugati, stružem (ipf.)—to
saw
- švideti se, svidim se (ipf.)—to
be pleasing
- šaptati, šapćem, *or* šaputati,
sapućem (ipf.)—to whisper
- šiti, šijem (ipf.)—to sew
- štedeti, štedim (ipf.)—to save,
economise
- šuteti, šutim (ipf.)—to keep
silent
- teći, tečem, tekao (ipf.)—to
flow
- ticati, tičem (ipf.)—to touch
- tkati, tkam *or* tkem *or* čem
(ipf.)—to weave
- trajati, trajem (ipf.)—to last
- trčati, trčim (ipf.)—to run
- treptati, trepćem (ipf.)—to
vibrate ; blink
- tresti, tresem, tresao (ipf.)—
to shake
- trpeti, trpim (ipf.)—to en-
dure, bear
- trti, tarem *or* trem, třo, trla
(ipf.)—to rub
- trzati, trzam *or* tržem (ipf.)—
to jerk, tug
- tući, tučem, tukao (ipf.)—to
hit
- ubiti, ubijem (pf.)—to kill
- ući, uđem, ušao (pf.)—to
enter

umaći, umaknem, umakao (pf.)—to escape	vesti, vezem, vezao (ipf.)—to embroider
umirati, umirem (ipf.)—to die	vezati, vežem (ipf.)—to bind
umreti, umrem, umro, umrla (pf.)—to die	videti, vidim (pf. and ipf.)— to see
upiti, upijem (pf.)—to absorb	vikati, vičem (ipf.)—to shout
upirati, upirem (ipf.)—to lean	viti, vijem (ipf.)—to wind
upreti, uprem, upro, uprla (pf.)—to lean	voleti, volim (ipf.)—to love, like
uprezati, uprežem (ipf.)—to harness	vrteti, vrtim (ipf.)—to revolve
uspeti, uspem (pf.)—to suc- ceed	vući, vučem, vukao (ipf.)—to pull
uspeti se, uspnem se (pf.)—to climb up	zaspati, zaspim (pf.)—to fall asleep
ustajati, ustajem (ipf.)—to get up	zateći, zatečem, zatekao (pf.) —to come upon
ustati, ustanem (pf.)—to get up	zepsti, zebem, zebao (ipf.)— to feel cold
uteći, utečem, utekao (pf.)— to flee	zvati, zovem (ipf.)—to call
uvesti, uvedem (pf.)—to lead in, introduce	zvečati, zvečim (ipf.)—to clank
uzeti, uzmem (pf.)—to take	zveketati, zvekećem (ipf.)—to rattle
užeći, užežem, užegao (pf.)— to ignite	želeti, želim (ipf.)—to wish
	žeti, žanjem (ipf.)—to harvest
	živeti, živim (ipf.)—to live
	žudeti, žudim (ipf.)—to crave

LIST OF COMMON VERBS TAKING THE GENITIVE, DATIVE, AND INSTRUMENTAL CASES

I. VERBS TAKING THE GENITIVE CASE

<p>bojati se—to be afraid of čuvati se—to beware of dočepati se¹—to grab držati se—to hold, adhere to gnušati se—to loathe kloniti se—to get out of the way of latiti se—to take up (e.g. latiti se posla—to set to work lišiti—to deprive (someone, acc.) of mašiti se—to touch, reach for najesti se—to eat one's fill of napiti se—to drink one's fill of napuniti se—to fill oneself with</p>	<p>nasititi se—to become satiated with nestati—to disappear (used impersonally, e.g. nestalo ga—he has disappeared) osloboditi se—to free oneself from otresti se—to get rid of, shake off plašiti se—to be scared of primiti se—to take upon oneself setiti se—to recall spasti se—to save oneself from stideti se—to be ashamed of ticati se—to concern (e.g. to se ne tiče mene)</p>
---	--

2. VERBS TAKING THE DATIVE CASE

Examples: pomoći (nekome)—to help (someone); diviti se (nečemu)—to admire (something).

<p>čestitati (nekome)—to congratulate</p>	<p>čuditi se (nečemu)—to wonder at diviti se (nečemu)—to admire</p>
---	--

¹ Many transitive verbs may be used reflexively in this way with the object in the genitive case.

dogoditi se (nekome)—to happen to	pomoći (nekome)—to help
dolikovati (nekome)—to befit	posvetiti se (nečemu)—to de- vote oneself to
dopadati se (nekome)—to be pleasing to	poveriti (nekome)—to confide
dopustiti (nekome)—to per- mit	prebaciti (nekome)—to re- proach
dosaditi (nekome)—to bore	pretiti (nekome)—to threaten
dozvoliti (nekome)—to per- mit	približiti se (nečemu, ne- kome)—to approach
klicati (nekome)—to applaud	prići (nečemu, nekome)—to approach
koristiti (nekome)—to profit, be useful to	prigovoriti (nekome)—to find fault with
laknuti ¹ (nekome)—to give relief to	prilagoditi se (nečemu)—to adapt oneself to
laskati (nekome)—to flatter	priličiti (nekome)—to beseem
nadati se (nečemu)—to hope for	primaći se (nečemu, nekome) —to approach
narediti (nekome)—to order	pripadati (nečemu, nekome) —to belong to
obećati (nekome)—to promise	prisustvovati (nečemu)—to be present at
obradovati se (nečemu)—to be delighted at	prkositi (nekome)—to spite, challenge
odgovoriti (nekome)—to answer	protiviti se (nečemu, nekome) —to oppose
odoleti (nekome, nečemu)— to resist	protivrečiti (nekome)—to contradict
oprostiti (nekome)—to for- give	protusloviti (nekome)—to contradict
podviknuti (nekome)—to ad- monish	radovati se (nečemu)—to re- joice at
pokoriti se (nekome, ne- čemu)—to submit to	

¹ e.g. used in the neuter, as impersonal verb : laknulo mi je—
I felt relief.

rugati se (nekome)—to mock	učiti (nekoga nečemu)—to in-
smejati se (nečemu, nekome)	struct (someone) in
—to laugh at	verovati ¹ (nekome)—to be-
smetati (nečemu, nekome)—	lieve
to hinder, disturb	zabraniti (nekome)—to forbid
suditi (nekome)—to judge	zameriti (nekome)—to blame
suprotstaviti se (nečemu, ne-	zapovedati (nekome)—to
kome)—to oppose	order
škoditi (nečemu, nekome)—to	zavideti (nekome)—to envy
harm	

3. VERBS TAKING THE INSTRUMENTAL CASE

Examples: vladati zemljom—to rule the country; proglasiti se predsednikom—to proclaim oneself president.

baviti se—to be occupied	oženiti se—to marry (of a
with, concerned with	man; e.g. oženiti se
hvalisati se—to boast of	Engleskinjom)
imenovati—to nominate, ap-	ponositi se—to pride oneself in
point (e.g. imenovati ne-	proglasiti—to proclaim (<i>see</i>
koga predsednikom)	imenovati)
koristiti se—to make use of	raspolagati—to dispose of,
maknuti (maći)—to make a	have at one's disposal
movement with	rukovoditi—to direct, manage
mahnuti—to make a sign or	smatrati—to regard, consider
motion with	(e.g. smatram ga dobrim
nazvati—to name (e.g. nazvali	čovekom)
su ga Vukom)	trgovati—to trade in
obilovati—to abound in	upravljati—to govern, direct
osećati se—to feel, e.g. osećati	vladati—to govern, rule
se umornim, osećati se	zabavljati se—to amuse one-
junakom	self with

¹ *But* verovati nešto—to believe something; verovati u nešto—to believe in something.

Also :

klimnuti glavom—to nod.

mignuti okom—to wink.

odmahnuti rukom—to make a sign with the hand, indicating
'No'.

slegnuti ramenima—to shrug the shoulders.

živeti (e.g. mirnim životom)—to live (a peaceful life).

umreti (e.g. strašnom smrću)—to die (a terrible death).

spavati (e.g. dubokim snom)—to sleep (a deep sleep).

3. FEMININE NOUNS WITH CONSONANTAL ENDINGS

The following are the commonest of the nouns declined like *stvar*. To the list must be added all collective nouns ending *-ad* (e.g. *momčad*—crew) and all abstract nouns ending *-ost* (e.g. *milost*—mercy).

blagodet—blessing

bojazan—fear

bolest—illness

buđ—mould, mildew

cev—tube, pipe

čađ—soot

čast—honour

ćud—temperament

dob—period, age

dobit—gain

draž—charm

glad—hunger

grudi (pl.)—chest, breast

jesen—autumn

kap—drop, drip

kob—fate

kokoš—hen

korist—use, usefulness

kost—bone

krv—blood

laž—lie, untruth

ljubav—love

mast—grease

misao (gen. *misli*)—thought

mladež—youth

moć—power

narav—nature, disposition

noć—night

obitelj—family

oblast—province

oči (pl.)—eyes

pamet—mind, intellect

paprat—fern	studen—bitter cold
peć—stove	stvar—thing, matter, affair
pomoć—help	svest—consciousness
povest—history	trulež—decay
pripovest—story	uši (pl.)—ears
propast—ruin, destruction	varoš—town
prsi (pl.)—breast	vaš—louse
ravan—plain	vest—item of news
raž—rye	vlast—power ; authorities
reč—word	zapoved—command
rumen—rosy glow	zapovest—command
savest—conscience	zavist—envy
slast—sweetness ; enjoyment	zob—oats
smrt—death	zver—wild animal
so (gen. soli)—salt	žeđ—thirst
srž—marrow, pith	

4. PREPOSITIONS

Note : Only the commonest meanings of the prepositions are given here ; other uses of them have already occurred in this book, and you will discover others in your reading.

Governing only the genitive case :

bez—without	od—from ; of ; since
blizu—near	oko—around
do—to, as far as ; until ; beside	osim—except ; besides
duž—alongside	pored—alongside ; besides
iz—out of	posle—after
kod—at the home of (French <i>chez</i>) ; close to	pre—before (in expressions of time)
kraj—alongside, beside	preko—across
mesto—instead of	protiv—against
nize—below	radi—for the sake of, because of

sem = osim	van—outside
spram—opposite, in front of	više—above
sred—in the middle of	vrh—above
suprot—opposite	zbog—because of

In addition to this list, compound prepositions, e.g. iz-među—between; nasred—in (or into) the middle of; iza—behind, govern the genitive case.

Governing only the dative case :

ka, k—towards, to.
uprkos—despite.

Governing only the accusative case :

kroz—through.
niz—down.
uz—up; close to

Governing only the locative case :

pri—by, near.

Governing the dative or locative case :

prema (with dat.)—towards; (with loc.)—according to;
opposite.

Governing the genitive or instrumental case :

sa, s (with gen.)—from off; (with instr.)—with.

Governing the genitive or accusative case :

mimo (with gen.)—in spite of, contrary to; (with acc.)—
past.

Governing the accusative or instrumental case :

među (with acc.)—among, between (indicating *motion to-*
wards among or between); (with instr.)—among.

nad (with acc.)—above (*motion towards* above); (with instr.)—above.

pod (with acc.)—under (*motion towards* under); (with instr.)—under.

pred (with acc.)—in front of (*motion towards* in front of); just before (in expressions of time); (with instr.)—in front of.

Governing the accusative or locative case :

na¹ (with acc.)—on to ; (with loc.)—on, at.

o (with acc.)—on to, against (when motion is indicated); (with loc.)—on, against ; concerning, about.

po (with acc.)—for² ; during³ ; (with loc.)—about⁴, on ; after.

Governing the genitive, accusative or instrumental case :

za (with gen.)—during the time of⁵ ; (with acc.)—for ; behind (*motion towards* behind) ; within, in (in expressions of time) ; (with instr.)—behind, following along behind.

Governing the genitive, accusative or locative case :

u (with gen.)—in, in the case of⁶ ; (with acc.)—to, into ; at, on (in certain expressions of time) ; (with loc.)—in.

1. A list of uses of this preposition follows this section. 2. In the sense of ' to fetch ', e.g. *ići po lekara*. 3. e.g. *po ceo dan*—the whole day long. 4. e.g. *šetati se po varoši*. 5. e.g. *za moga života*—during my lifetime. 6. In such sentences as ' *kosa kao u njegove majke* '—' hair like his mother's '.

USES OF THE PREPOSITION *na*

Although the usual meanings of *na* are ' on ' or ' at ' (with the locative case) and ' on to ' (with the accusative), this preposition is used with many nouns and in many phrases where English has some other preposition. The following list

includes the commonest of these. The locative case has been given in this list, but the accusative case must of course be substituted when *motion towards* is understood, e.g. biti na letovanju ; ići na letovanje.

na Balkanu—in the Balkans	na pošti—at the post, post-office
na Bledu ¹ —at Bled	na povratku—on the way back
na Cetinju—in Cetinje	na predavanju—at a lecture
na domaku—within reach	na predstavi—at a performance
na doručku—at breakfast	na radu—at work
na igranci—at a dance	na rastanku—at parting
na ispitu—at an examination	na reci—on <i>or</i> by a river
na istoku—in the east	na ručku—at luncheon
na jezeru—on <i>or</i> by a lake	na sastanku—at meeting
na jugu—in the south	na sednici—at a meeting
na koncertu ² —at a concert	na selu—in the country (as opposed to town)
na kraju—at the end	na severu—in the north
na letovanju—on (summer) holiday	na stanici—at the station
na mesečini—in the moonlight	na sudu (sudenju)—at a trial (legal)
na mestu—at a place ; on the spot, at once	na suncu—in the sunshine
na miru—in peace	na svadbi—at a wedding
na moru—on the sea ; at the seaside	na svetu—in the world
na nebu—in the sky	na uglu—at the corner
na odmoru—on holiday	na ulici—in the street
na odsustvu—on leave	na univerzitetu—at the university
na početku—at the beginning	na utakmici—in a competition
na poslu—at work	

¹ *Na* is used with many names of places associated with lakes, rivers, etc.

² But ' u pozorištu '—' at the theatre '.

na večeri—at supper, dinner	na vratima—in the doorway
na venčanju—at a wedding	na zabavi—at a party
na vlasti—in authority	na zapadu—in the west

Phrases : Biti nekome na pomoći—to be of help to someone ; hvala na (with loc.)—thank you for ; ići na rad—to go to work ; imati (držati) nekoga na oku—to keep one's eye on someone ; misliti na nekoga—to think of someone ; odgovoriti na pitanje—to answer a question ; pasti na um—to occur to one's mind ; raditi na nečemu—to be working on something ; zakasniti na (with acc.)—to be late for, to miss.

na nedelju (mesec, godinu, etc.) dana—for a week (month, year, etc.)¹ ; na njegovo iznenađenje—to his surprise ; na pamet—by heart ; na poklon—as a gift ; na primer—for example ; na prvi pogled—at first glance ; na sav glas—at the top of one's voice ; na silu—by force ; na taj način—in that manner ; na to—thereupon ; na veru—on parole ; na vreme—in time, punctually ; na moju veliku žalost—to my great sorrow.

¹ See p. 104.

5. GENERAL VOCABULARY

of Serbo-Croatian words occurring in the Lessons
and in the Sentences and Passages for Translation ¹

Note : This Vocabulary contains some words which have two or more meanings. Only those meanings necessary to the comprehension of the Serbo-Croatian sentences and passages in this book are given here. Numerals have not been included in this Vocabulary, as they may be found immediately by reference to Lessons XIV, XV, and XXIII. Where there is no 'moveable *a*' the gen. sing. of nouns and the fem. sing. of adjectives have not been given.

A	balkon—balcony
a—and, but	baš—just, exactly
adresa—address	bašta—garden
advokat—lawyer	beleg (<i>ije</i> : biljeg)—mark, sign
Ah!—Oh!	beo, bela (<i>ije</i> : bijel, bijela)—
ako—if	white
ali—but	Beograd—Belgrade
amo—hither	Beograđanin—native of Bel-
april—April	grade
automobil—motor car	berberin—barber
avgust—August	b(ij)esan, b(ij)esna—furious
avion—airplane	bez—without
	biblioteka—library
B	bife (m.)—buffet
baba—old woman, granny	biftek—steak
bacati (-am ; ipf.)—to throw,	bioskop—cinema
throw away	birati (-am ; ipf.)—to choose
baciti (-im ; pf.)—to throw,	biti—to be
throw away	bivši—former, past

¹ See Introduction p. xii.

blag—mild, gentle
 bl(ij)ed—pale
 blizak, bliska—near, close
 blizu—near
 Bog—God
 bogat, bogata—rich
 boja—colour
 bojati se (-im ; ipf.)—to fear
 bol—pain
 bolestan, bolesna—ill
 bol(j)eti (-i ; ipf.)—to hurt,
 ache
 bolji—better
 bomba—bomb
 borba—struggle, fight
 Božić—Christmas
 brat—brother
 brdo—high hill
 br(ij)eg—hill
 breskva—peach
 brijati (-em ; ipf.)—to
 shave
 brinuti se (-em ; ipf.)—to be
 anxious
 brod—ship
 brz—quick
 brzo—quickly
 brže—more quickly
 brži—quicker
 bubreg—kidney
 budala—fool

C

carinik—customs officer

ceo, cela (*ije* : cijel or cio,
 cijela)—whole
 Ciganin—gipsy
 cigareta—cigarette
 cipela—shoe
 crkva—church
 crn—black
 crven—red
 crvenkast—reddish
 cv(ij)et—flower

Č

čaj—tea
 čarapa—stocking
 čas—moment ; hour ; lesson
 čaša—glass, tumbler
 Čeh—a Czech
 ček—cheque
 čekaonica—waiting-room
 čekati (-am ; ipf.)—to wait
 čekić—hammer
 čest—dense, frequent
 čestitka—greetings card
 često—often
 četvrt—quarter
 četvrtak (gen. četvrtka)—
 Thursday
 čiji, čija—whose
 čim—as soon as
 činiti (-im ; ipf.)—to do
 činovnik—official, clerk
 čitalac (gen. čitaoca)—reader
 čitati (-am ; ipf.)—to read
 članak (gen. članka)—article

čov(j)ek—man
 čudan, čudna—strange
 čuditi se (-im ; ipf.)—to be surprised
 čuti (-jem ; pf., ipf.)—to hear
 čvrst—firm, hard

Ć

ćutati (-im ; ipf.)—to be silent

D

da—yes
 da—that
 dakle—so, well then
 dalek—distant
 daleko—far away
 da li—whether
 dalje—farther
 Dalmacija—Dalmatia
 dan—day
 danas—today
 danju—by day
 dati (dam ; pf.)—to give
 datum—date
 davati (dajem ; ipf.)—to give
 debeo, debela—thick, fat
 decembar (gen. decembra)—December
 deo (gen. dela ; *ije* : dio)—part
 desni—right-hand
 d(ij)ete (gen. d(j)eteta)—child

d(j)evojka—girl
 dignuti (-em ; pf.)—to raise
 dinar—Yugoslav coin
 divan, divna—lovely
 divan—divan, couch
 diviti se (-im ; ipf.)—to admire, wonder at
 dizati (dižem ; ipf.)—to raise
 dlan—palm of hand
 dnevno—daily
 dno—bottom, end
 do—to, as far as ; until ; beside
 doba—time, period
 dobar, dobra—good
 dobiti (dobijem ; pf.)—to get
 dobro—well
 dockan—late
 docnije—later
 dočekati (-am ; pf.)—to wait for
 doći (dodem ; došao, došla ; pf.)—to come
 dodatak (gen. dodatka)—supplement
 događati se (-a ; ipf.)—to happen
 dogoditi se (-i ; pf.)—to happen
 dok—while
 dok ne—until
 dolaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to come
 don(ij)eti (donesem ; pf.)—to bring

donositi (-im ; ipf.)—to bring	dvoje—a couple
dopadati se (-am ; ipf.)—to be pleasing	dvojica—a couple (of men)
dopasti se (dopadnem ; pf.)— to be pleasing	DŽ
dopisnica (dopisna karta)— postcard	džep—pocket
dopuštati (-am ; ipf.)—to allow	Đ
dopustiti (-im ; pf.)—to allow	đak—schoolboy, student
doručak (gen. doručka)— breakfast	E
dosadan, dosadna—boring	Engleska—England
dokora—soon	engleski—English
dosta—enough, fairly	Engleskinja—Englishwoman
do viđenja—au revoir	Englez—Englishman
dovoljno—enough	eno—there is, are
drag—dear	eto—there (here) is, are
drug, drugarica—companion	evo—here is, are
drugi—other, another, second	F
društvo—company, society	februar—February
drvo—tree	fijoka—drawer
državni—belonging to the state	fini—fine, splendid
dubok—deep	francuski—French
dućan (gen. dućana)—shop	Francuskinja—Frenchwoman
dug—long	Francuz—Frenchman
dugačak, dugačka—long	funta—pound
dugme—button	G
dugo—for a long time	galama—noise, din
duh—spirit	gazda—proprietor
dužnost—duty	gazdarica—proprietress
	gd(j)e—where

gladak, glatka—smooth
 gladan, gladna—hungry
 glas—voice
 glasno—loudly
 glava—head
 gledati (-am ; ipf.)—to watch,
 look at
 glumac (gen. glumca)—actor
 glumica—actress
 gluv—deaf
 gluvonem—deaf and dumb
 godina—year
 gori—worse
 gore—above
 gor(j)eti (-im ; ipf.)—to be
 burning
 gospodin—Mr., gentleman
 gospodski—in a gentlemanly
 fashion
 gospođa—Mrs., lady
 gospođica—Miss, young
 woman
 gost—guest
 gostionica—inn
 gotov—ready, finished
 govoriti (-im ; ipf.)—to speak
 grad—city
 građanin—citizen
 grana—branch
 granica—frontier
 grbača—spine
 grub—coarse, rough
 grudi (f. pl.)—chest, breast
 gust—thick, dense

H

hajdemo !—let's go !
 haljina—dress, garment
 hartija—paper
 hitan, hitna—urgent
 hladan, hladna—cold
 hl(j)eb—bread
 hodnik—corridor
 hotel—hotel
 hrabar, hrabra—brave
 hrabrost (f.)—courage
 hrana—food
 Hrvat—Croat
 Hrvatska—Croatia
 hrvatski—Croatian
 hrvatskosrpski—Serbo-
 Croatian
 ht(j)eti (hoću, hoćeš, etc.,
 ipf.)—to wish, want
 hvala—thanks
 hvaliti (-im ; ipf.)—to praise

I

i—and, too
 i . . . i—both . . . and
 iako—although
 ići (idem ; išao, išla ; ipf.)—
 to go
 idući—the next, the coming
 igla—needle
 igračka—toy
 ikad(a)—ever
 ili—or

ili . . . ili—either . . . or	izgovoriti (-im ; pf.)—to pronounce
ima—he (she, it) has ; there is, there are	izgubiti (-im ; pf.)—to lose
imati (-am ; ipf.)—to have	izići (izidem ; izišao, izišla ; pf.)—to go out
ime—name	izlaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to go out
imenik—directory	izlet(j)eti (-im ; pf.)—to fly out
imenovati (imenujem ; pf. and ipf.)—to elect	izlog—display (e.g. in shop window)
inače—otherwise	između—between
inostranstvo—abroad	iznenaditi (-im ; pf.)—to surprise
inteligentan, inteligentna—intelligent	izvaditi (-im ; pf.)—to draw out
iskusan, iskusna—experienced	izviniti (-im ; pf.)—to excuse
ispod—under, from under	izvući (izvučem ; pf.)—to pull out, draw out
ispratiti (-im ; pf.)—to accompany, see off	
ispričati (-am ; pf.)—to relate	
ist(j)erati (-am ; pf.)—to drive out	
isti—the same	
istina—truth	
iz—out of	
izabrati (izaberem ; pf.)—to choose	
izaći (<i>see</i> izići)	
izbrojati (-im ; pf.)—to count out	
izgled—appearance	
izgledati (-am ; ipf.)—to appear, seem	
izgor(j)eti (-im ; pf.)—to burn out	
	J
	ja—I
	jabuka—apple ; apple tree
	jagnje—lamb
	jak—strong
	januar—January
	jasan, jasna—clear
	jasno—clearly
	jastuk—cushion, pillow
	jedan, jedna—one
	jedva—scarcely
	jeftin—cheap
	jelo—food
	jelovnik—menu

jer—because	kao—as
jesti (jedem ; ipf.)—to eat	kao da—as if
jezero—lake	kapak (gen. kapka)—shutter
jezik—language, tongue	kaput—coat
još—still, yet	karta—card ; ticket ; map
još jedan—one more	kasno—late
Jovan—John	kašika—spoon
juče—yesterday	kašičica—teaspoon
Jugosloven, Jugoslaven—a Yugoslav	kazati (kažem ; ipf.)—to say, tell
jugoslovenski, jugoslavenski —Yugoslav	kazniti (-im ; pf.)—to punish
Jugoslavija—Yugoslavia	kćerka—daughter
jul—July	kći—daughter
jun—June	kelner—waiter
junak—hero	kilogram—kilogram
juriti (-im ; ipf.)—to hasten	klasa—class
jurnuti (-em ; pf.)—to dash	klima—climate
jutros—this morning	klupa—bench, seat
	ključ—key
	knez—prince
	knjiga—book
	književnost—literature
	ko—who
	kod—at the home of ; close to
	kod kuće—at home
	kofer—suitcase
	kcgod—someone
	koji—who ; which
	kola (n. pl.)—car, cart
	kol(j)eno—knee
	koliko—how much, how many
	kolovoz—August
	komad—piece

K

k, ka—towards
kad, kada—when
kafa—coffee
kafana—café
kafanski—belonging to a café
kajati se (-em ; ipf.) to repent, regret
kakav, kakva—what kind of ; what a . . .
kako—how
kamen—stone, rock
kancelarija—office

komedija—comedy
 konac (gen. konca)—thread
 končić—little thread
 koncerat (*or* koncert)—concert
 kondukter—guard, conductor
 konzul—consul
 konj—horse
 koral—coral
 koristan, korisna—useful
 kosa—hair
 kost (f.)—bone
 koštati (-am ; ipf.)—to cost
 kovčeg—box, chest
 koverat (gen. koverta)—envelope
 kraj (prepn.)—near, beside
 kraj—end, extremity
 kralj—king
 krasti (kradem ; ipf.)—to steal
 kratak, kratka—short
 krenuti (-em ; pf.)—to start off
 krevet—bed
 kriv—crooked ; guilty
 krov—roof
 kroz—through
 krut—stiff, rigid
 kucati (-am ; ipf.)—to knock, tap
 kuća—house
 kućica—cottage
 kuda—whither

kuhinja—kitchen
 kupati (se) (-am ; ipf.)—to bathe
 kupatilo—bathroom
 kupe (m.)—compartment in train
 kupiti (-im ; pf.)—to buy
 kupovati (-ujem ; ipf.)—to buy
 kutija—box
 kuvati (-am ; ipf.)—to cook

L

lak—easy, light
 leći (legnem ; pf.)—to lie down
 led—ice
 leđa (neut. pl.)—back (of one's body)
 legati (ležem ; ipf.)—to be in the act of lying down ; to lie down (repeatedly)
 l(j)ekar—doctor
 l(ij)ép—beautiful, nice
 l(j)eti—in summer
 l(j)eto—summer
 l(ij)evi—left-hand
 ležati (-im ; ipf.)—to lie, to be in a lying position
 lice—face
 ličan, lična—personal
 ličnost—personality ; personage

lipanj—June
 list—leaf; sheet of paper;
 newspaper
 listopad—October
 litar (gen. litra)—litre
 liti (lijem; ipf.)—to pour
 loš—bad
 lud—mad

Lj

ljubav (f.)—love
 ljubazan, ljubazna—amiable
 ljudi—people; men
 ljut—keen, hot; angry

M

mačka—cat
 magla—fog
 mahom—instantly
 maj—May
 majka—mother
 malen—small
 mali—small
 malo—a little
 manje—less
 manji—smaller
 marama—scarf
 marka—(postage) stamp
 mariti za (-im; ipf.)—to care
 about
 mart—March
 mašina—machine, typewriter
 mati—mother
 mazga—mule

med—honey
 među—among
 međutim—meanwhile; how-
 ever
 mek—soft
 m(j)esec—month, moon
 meso—meat
 m(j)esto—place
 metar (gen. metra)—metre
 metati (mećem; ipf.)—to put
 metnuti (-em; pf.)—to put
 mi—we
 milicajac (gen. milicajca)—
 policeman
 milo mu je—he is glad
 milja—mile
 ministar (gen. ministra)—
 minister
 ministarstvo—ministry
 mio, mila—dear
 mir—peace
 miran, mirna—peaceful, calm
 misao (f., gen. misli)—
 thought
 misliti (-im; ipf.)—to think
 mnogi—many, many a
 mnogo—much, many
 moći (mogu, možeš, etc.;
 ipf.)—to be able
 moguće—possible
 moj—my, mine
 molim—please
 momak (gen. momka)—young
 man

morati (-am ; ipf.)—to be obliged to, to have to	napraviti (-im ; pf.)—to make
more—sea	napred—forward ; come in !
most—bridge	naprotiv—on the contrary
možda—perhaps	napustiti (-im ; pf.)—to abandon, leave
mračan, mračna—dark	naravno—naturally, of course
mrak—darkness	naročito—specially
mučiti (-im ; ipf.)—to torment	narodan, narodna—national
Muslimanka—Moslem woman	narodnost—nationality
muzej—museum	naslikati (-am ; pf.)—to paint ; take photo
muzika—music	naslov—title, heading
muž—husband	naš—our, ours
	natrag—back (e.g. ići natrag : to go back)
N	naučiti (-im ; pf.)—to learn ; teach
na—on, on to ; at	navečer—in the evening
načiniti (-im ; pf.)—to make	na vreme—in time, punctually
naći (nađem ; pf.)—to find	naviknuti (-em ; pf.)—to accustom
nad—over, above	nazeb—cold, chill
naglas—aloud	nazvati (nazovem ; pf.)—to call, name
naglo—suddenly	na žalost—unfortunately
najmanje—least, at least	ne—no, not
najzad—last, lastly	nebo—sky
nakit—ornament	ned(j)elja—week ; Sunday
nalaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to find	negd(j)e—somewhere
naljutiti se (-im ; pf.)—to become angry	nego—than ; but (on the contrary)
nam(j)enuti (-im ; pf.)—to assign	neko—somebody
naočari—spectacles	
napisati (napišem ; pf.)—to write	
napolju—outside	

neki—some, some sort of	nov—new
nekoliko—some, several	novac (gen. novca)—money
nema—there is not, there are not	novembar (gen. novembra)— November
nemati (-am ; ipf.)—not to have	novine (f. pl.)—newspaper
N(j)emačka—Germany	nozdrva—nostril
nemoguće—impossible	nož—knife
neočekivan, neočekivana— unexpected	nužan, nužna—necessary
nepoznat, nepoznata—un- known	Nj
neprijatelj—enemy	njegov—his ; its
nešto—something	njen, njezin—her, hers ; its
ni—not even	njihov—their, theirs
ni . . . ni—neither . . . nor	O
ničiji—nobody's	o—on, about ; concerning ; against
nigd(j)e—nowhere	obala—coast, shore
nijedan, nijedna—not one, not a single	obećati (-am ; pf.)—to prom- ise
nikad(a)—never	obećavati (-am ; ipf.)—to promise
nikakav, nikakva—no kind of	običaj—custom
niko—nobody	obično—usually
ništa—nothing	objasniti (-im ; pf.)—to ex- plain
ništa ne mari—it doesn't matter	objašnjenje—explanation
niz—down (prepn.)	oboje—both
nizak, niska—low	obojica—both (men)
noć (f.)—night	obojiti (-im ; pf.)—to dye
noću—by night	oboriti (-im ; pf.)—to over- throw
noga—leg ; foot	
nos—nose	
nositi (-im ; ipf.)—to carry, wear	

obradovati se (obradujem se ; pf.)—to be glad	oduševljen—enthusiastic
obrijati (-em ; pf.)—to shave	oglas—small advertisement, announcement
obrva—eyebrow	ogledalo—looking-glass
obući (obučem ; obukao, obukla ; pf.)—to put on (clothes)	ograda—fence, wall
očekivati (očekujem ; ipf.)— to expect	ogroman, ogromna—enorm- ous
očigledno—obviously	oko—around (prepn.)
od—from ; of ; since	oko (pl. oči)—eye
odakle—whence	okrenuti (-em ; pf.)—to turn
odavna—for a long time past	oktobar (gen. oktobra)—Oc- tober
od(ij)elo—suit, clothing	okup—gathering, assembly
odgovarati (-am ; ipf.)—to answer	olovka—pencil
odgovoriti (-im ; pf.)—to answer	on, ona, ono—he, she, it
odjednom—suddenly	onaj (ona, ono)—that
odjuriti (-im ; pf.)—to hurry off	onakav, onakva—of that kind
odlaganje—postponement	onda—then
odlazak (gen. odlaska)—de- parture	oni (masc.), one (fem.), ona (neut.)—they
odlaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to de- part	opasan, opasna—dangerous
odličan, odlična—excellent	opasnost (f.)—danger
odložiti (-im ; pf.)—to post- pone	opaziti (-im ; pf.)—to notice
odlučiti (-im ; pf.)—to re- solve, decide	opet—again
odmah—immediately	opravdanje—justification
ods(j)ečno—abruptly	opravdati (-am ; pf.)—to justify
	orah—walnut
	oriti se (-i ; ipf.)—to resound
	ormar—cupboard
	osećati (-am ; ipf.)—to feel
	osim—except
	osm(j)ehivati se (osm(j)ehu- jem se ; ipf.) —to smile

ostajati (-em ; ipf.)—to remain	pas (gen. psa)—dog
ostatak (gen. ostatka)—remainder	pasoš—passport
ostati (ostanem ; pf.)—to remain	pasti (padnem, pao ; pf.)—to fall
ostaviti (-im ; pf.)—to leave, abandon	paziti (-im ; ipf.)—to pay attention
ošišati (-am ; pf.)—to cut (hair)	pažljiv—careful
oštar, oštra—sharp	peći (pečem ; pekao, pekla ; ipf.)—to bake, roast
otac (gen. oca)—father	pekmez—jam
otići (otidem, odem ; otišao, otišla ; pf.)—to go away	penjati se (penjem se ; ipf.)—to climb
otkriće—discovery	pero—pen ; feather
otputovati (otputujem ; pf.)—to start on a journey	peron—station platform
otvarati (-am ; ipf.)—to open	p(j)esma—poem, ballad, song
otvoriti (-im ; pf.)—to open	p(j)ešice—on foot
ovaj (ova, ovo)—this	p(j)eške—on foot
ovakav, ovakva—such, like this	petak (gen. petka)—Friday
ovako—thus, so	p(j)evati (-am ; ipf.)—to sing
ovd(j)e—here	pisati (pišem ; ipf.)—to write
ožujak (gen. ožujka)—March	pismo—letter
	pismonoša—postman
	pitanje—question
	pitati (-am ; ipf.)—to ask
	piti (pijem ; ipf.)—to drink
	pivo—beer
	plakati (plačem ; ipf.)—to cry, weep
	planina—mountain
	plata—salary, wages
	platiti (-im ; pf.)—to pay
	platno—linen
	pleće—shoulder
	pleme—tribe

P

pa—*and, and so*
 padati (-am ; ipf.)—*to fall*
 paket—*packet, parcel*
 pamet (f.)—*mind, intelligence*
 par—*pair*
 parče (gen. parčeta)—*piece*
 park—*park*

- plemenit—noble
 plesti (pletēm ; ipf.)—to knit
 plitak, plitka—shallow
 pljesnuti (-em ; pf.)—to ap-
 plaud
 po (prepn.)—by, on, about
 po—half
 pob(j)eći (pob(j)egnem ; pob-
 (j)egao, pob(j)egla ; pf.)—
 to flee
 pobožati se (pobojim se ; pf.)
 —to become afraid
 početak (gen. početka)—be-
 ginning
 početi (počnem ; pf.)—to
 begin
 poći (pođem ; pošao, pošla ;
 pf.)—to start off
 pod (prepn.)—under
 pod—floor
 podignuti (-em ; pf.)—to lift,
 pick up
 podne—noon
 poginuti (-em ; pf.)—to
 perish, be killed
 pogledati (-am ; pf.)—to
 glance
 pogodan, pogodna—favour-
 able
 pogreška—mistake
 pohitati (-am ; pf.)—to hurry
 off
 pojesti (pojedom ; pojeo ; pf.)
 —to eat up
 pokazati (pokažem ; pf.)—to
 show
 pokloniti se (-im ; pf.)—to
 bow
 pola—half
 polako—slowly, gently
 polazak (gen. polaska)—
 departure
 polaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to de-
 part
 polica—shelf
 policija—police
 položaj (gen. položaja)—posi-
 tion
 polud(j)eti (-im ; pf.)—to go
 mad
 polje—field, plain
 pomagati (pomažem ; ipf.)—
 to help
 pomalo—a little
 pomisliti (-im ; pf.)—to
 imagine, have an idea
 pomoć (f.)—help
 pomoći (pomognem ; pomo-
 gao, pomogla ; pf.)—to
 help
 pomorandža—orange
 ponedjeljak (gen. ponedeljka)
 —Monday
 ponekad—sometimes
 pon(ij)eti (ponesem ; pf.)—
 to bring, take
 ponuditi (-im ; pf.)—to
 offer

popeti se (popnem se ; pf.)— to climb	pošten—honourable, honest
popiti (popijem ; pf.)—to drink up	pošto—after, since
pored—alongside	poštovan—respected
por(ij)eklo—origin	poštovanje—respect
porodica—family	potpisati (potpišem ; pf.)— to sign
poručiti (-im ; pf.)—to order, give order for	potpisivati (potpisujem ; ipf.) —to sign
posao (gen. posla ; pl. po- slovi)—job, work	potrčati (-im ; pf.)—to run off
pos(j)ećivati (pos(j)ećujem ; ipf.)—to visit	potreban, potrebna—neces- sary
pos(j)eta—visit	potvrditi (-im ; pf.)—to con- firm
pos(j)etiti (-im ; pf.)—to visit	pov(j)erljiv—confidential
poslati (pošljem ; pf.)—to send	povesti (povedem ; poveo ; pf.)—to take, lead
posl(ij)e (prepn.)—after	povrće—vegetables
posl(ij)e (adverb)—afterwards	povući (povučem ; povukao, povukla ; pf.)—to pull ; draw
posl(j)ednji—the last	pozajmiti (-im ; pf.)—to lend ; borrow
poslušan, poslušna—obedient	pozdrav—greeting
poslušati (-am ; pf.)—to listen, obey	pozdraviti (-im ; pf.)—to greet
poslužavnik—tray	pozdravljati (-am ; ipf.)—to greet
posmatrati (-am ; ipf.)—to observe	poziv—invitation
pospan—sleepy	poznaničnik—acquaintance
postaviti (-im ; ipf.)—to put, place	poznati (-am ; pf.)—to get to know
postelja—bed	poznavanje—knowledge, acquaintance
po svoj prilici—apparently, evidently	pozorište—theatre
pošta—post, post office	
poštanski—postal, postage	

pozvati (pozovem; pf.)—to invite, summon	predvid(j)eti (-im; pf.)—to foresee
prag—threshold	predviđati (-am; ipf.)—to foresee
pratiti (-im; ipf.)—to accompany	prekinuti (-em; pf.)—to interrupt
pravda—justice	prekjuče—the day before yesterday
pravi—real, authentic	preko—across
pravilno—regularly, correctly	prek(o)sutra—the day after tomorrow
prazan, prazna—empty	prekrasan, prekrasna—very beautiful, excellent
praznik—holiday	prelaziti (-im; ipf.)—to cross
pr(ij)e—before	prema—towards; opposite
prebaciti (-im; pf.)—to throw across	pre nego što—before
preći (pređem; prešao, prešla; pf.)—to cross	prenoćiti (-im; pf.)—to pass the night
pred—in front of; just before	preporučēn—registered
predati (-am; pf.)—to hand over; register (luggage)	prepoznati (-am; pf.)—to recognise
predavanje—lecture	preseliti se (-im; pf.)—to move house
predgrađe—suburb	prestati (prestanem; pf.)—to cease
predlagati (predlažem; ipf.)—to suggest	pr(ij)etiti (-im; ipf.)—to threaten
predlog—suggestion	prevariti (-im; pf.)—to deceive
predložiti (-im; pf.)—to suggest	prevariti se (-im; pf.)—to make a mistake
preds(j)ednik—president	prevodilac (gen. prevodioca)—translator
predstaviti (-im; pf.)—to introduce, present	
predstavljati (-am; ipf.)—to introduce, present	
preduzeće—undertaking	
preduzeti (preduzmem; pf.)—to undertake	

- prevoditi (-im ; ipf.)—to translate
 priča—tale
 pričati (-am ; ipf.)—to relate
 pričiniti se (-im ; pf.)—to seem
 prići (priđem ; prišao, prišla ; pf.)—to approach
 prihvatati (-am ; ipf.)—to accept
 prihvatiti (-im ; pf.)—to accept
 prijatan, prijatna—pleasant
 prijatelj—friend (m.)
 prijateljica—friend (f.)
 prijateljski—friendly
 prilaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to approach
 prilika—opportunity
 primati (-am ; ipf.)—to receive
 prim(ij)etiti (-im ; pf.)—to notice
 primiti (-im ; pf.)—to receive
 pripaliti (-im ; pf.)—to light, ignite
 pripov(ij)etka—short story
 pristati (pristanem ; pf.)—to consent
 pritrčati (-im ; pf.)—to run up to
 privlačan, privlačna—attractive
 prizemlje—ground floor
 priznati (-am ; pf.)—to admit, confess
 probuditi (-im ; pf.)—to awaken
 pročitati (-am ; pf.)—to read through
 proći (prođem ; prošao, prošla ; pf.)—to pass
 prodati (-am ; pf.)—to sell
 prodavati (prodajem ; ipf.)—to sell
 produžiti (-im ; pf.)—to continue
 profesor—professor, teacher
 progovoriti (-im ; pf.)—to utter
 prokleti (prokunem ; pf.)—to curse
 prolaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to pass
 prol(j)eće—Spring
 prosinac (gen. prosinca)—December
 prostr(ij)eti (-em ; pf.)—to spread
 prošao, prošla—past, last
 protiv—against
 proučavati (-am ; ipf.)—to study
 provesti (provedem ; proveo ; pf.)—to pass (time)
 provoditi (-im ; ipf.)—to pass (time)
 prozor—window
 prsi (f. pl.)—chest, breast

prst—finger
 prsten—ring (on finger)
 prtljag (gen. prtljaga)—
 luggage
 pružiti (-im ; pf.)—to pass,
 offer
 prvi—first
 prvo—firstly
 pukovnik—colonel
 pustiti (-im ; pf.)—to let, let
 go
 pušiti (-im ; ipf.)—to smoke
 puštati (-am ; ipf.)—to let,
 let go
 put—road ; journey
 put—time
 putnik—traveller
 putovanje—journey, travell-
 ing
 putovati (putujem ; ipf.)—to
 travel

R

račun—bill
 rad—work
 radio (gen. radija)—wireless
 raditi (-im ; ipf.)—to work
 radnik—worker
 radnja—shop
 rado—gladly
 radost—joy
 radostan, radosna—joyful
 radovati se (radujem se ; ipf.)
 —to be glad

radoznao, radoznala—inquisi-
 tive
 rana—wound
 rano—early
 raspoložen—disposed ; in a
 good mood
 rast—growth
 rasti (rastem ; rastao, rasla ;
 ipf.)—to grow
 rat—war
 ravnodušno—with equanimity
 razbijati (-am ; ipf.)—to
 smash
 razbiti (-ijem ; pf.)—to smash
 razgovarati (-am ; ipf.)—to
 talk, converse
 razgovor—conversation
 različit—different, various
 razlog—reason
 razumeti (-em ; ipf.)—to
 understand
 razumevati (-am ; ipf.)—to
 understand
 razviti (-ijem ; pf.)—to de-
 velop
 r(ij)eč (f.)—word
 rečenica—sentence
 r(j)ečnik—dictionary
 reći (reknem ; rekao, rekla ;
 pf.)—to say
 red—row, order
 redak (gen. retka)—line
 r(ij)edak, r(ij)etka—rare,
 sparse, infrequent

- r(ij)eka—river
 restoran—restaurant
 rezervacija—reservation
 rezervirati (-am ; pf. and ipf.)—to reserve
 riba—fish
 ritam (gen. ritma)—rhythm
 rod—birth, origin
 roditi (-im ; pf.)—to bear (children)
 roditelj—parent
 roman—novel
 ručak (gen. ručka)—luncheon
 ručati (-am ; pf.)—to lunch
 rujan (gen. rujna)—September
 ruka—hand, arm
 rukav—sleeve
 rukavica—glove
- S
- s, sa—with ; from
 sad, sada—now
 sala—hall, room
 salon—drawing room
 sam, sama—alone ; oneself
 samo—only
 san (gen. sna)—dream, sleep
 saobraćaj—traffic
 saopštiti (-im ; pf.)—to communicate, report
 sastati se (sastanem ; pf.)—to meet
 sasvim—quite, completely
- sat—hour
 sav (sva, sve)—all, the whole
 sav(j)estan, sav(j)esna—conscientious
 sav(j)et—advice
 sav(j)etovati (sav(j)etujem ; ipf.)—to advise
 saviti (savijem ; pf.)—to bend, twist
 sazidati (-am ; pf.)—to build
 s(j)ećati se (-am ; ipf.)—to remember
 s(j)eći (s(j)ečem ; s(j)ekao, s(j)ekla ; ipf.)—to cut
 s(j)edati (-am ; ipf.)—to sit down, keep sitting down
 s(j)edeti (-im ; ipf.)—to sit, be sitting
 s(j)ednica—meeting, assembly
 selo—village
 seljak (gen. seljaka)—peasant
 sem (see *osim*)
 s(j)eme—seed
 s(j)enka—shadow
 septembar (gen. septembra)—September
 s(j)esti (s(j)ednem ; s(j)eo, s(j)ela ; pf.)—to sit down
 sestra—sister
 s(j)etiti se (-im ; pf.)—to remember
 sići (siđem ; sišao, sišla ; pf.)—to descend

- siguran, sigurna—sure, certain
 sigurno—certainly
 sijati (-am ; ipf.)—to shine
 siječanj (gen. siječnja)—
 January
 silaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to
 descend
 sin—son
 sinoć—last night
 sir—cheese
 siromah—poor man
 siromašan, siromašna—poor
 sitan, sitna—tiny
 sitnina—trifle, small change
 skidati (-am ; ipf.)—to take off
 skinuti (-em ; pf.)—to take
 off
 skočiti (-im ; pf.)—to jump
 skup—expensive
 skupa—together
 sladak, slatka—sweet
 sladoled—ice cream
 slagati se (slažem ; ipf.)—to
 agree
 slatko—sweetly ; with relish
 slatko—a syrupy jam
 sl(ij)editi (-im ; ipf.)—to
 follow
 sl(ij)edeći—following, next
 slika—picture
 slikar—painter
 slikati (-am ; ipf.)—to paint,
 draw ; take photograph
 slobodan, slobodna—free
 slomiti (-im ; pf.)—to break
 slučaj—chance, event
 sluga—servant (m.)
 slušati (-am ; ipf.)—to listen
 služiti (-im ; ipf.)—to serve
 smatrati (-am ; ipf.)—to con-
 sider
 smejati se (-em ; ipf.)—to
 laugh
 sm(ij)ěšiti se (-im ; ipf.)—to
 smile
 smetati (-am ; ipf.)—to hin-
 der, disturb
 smeti (-em ; ipf.)—to dare,
 be allowed
 smokva—fig
 snaha—daughter-in-law
 sn(ij)eg—snow
 soba—room
 spavati (-am ; ipf.)—to sleep
 spisak (gen. spiska)—list
 spreman, spremna—ready,
 prepared
 spremati (-am ; ipf.)—to pre-
 pare
 spremiti (-im ; pf.)—to pre-
 pare
 sramota—shame
 Srbin—Serb
 srce—heart
 srdačno—cordially
 sreća—fortune, happiness
 srećan, srećna—happy

- srećom—fortunately
 sr(ij)eda—Wednesday
 sresti (sretnem ; sreo, sreła ;
 pf.)—to meet
 srpanj (gen. srpnja)—July
 Srpkinja—Serbian woman
 srpski—Serbian
 srpskohrvatski—Serbo-
 Croatian
 stajati (-em ; ipf.)—to stand
 stalno—constantly
 stan—flat, apartment
 stanica—station
 stanični—of the station
 stanovati (stanujem ; ipf.)—
 to reside
 stanovnik—inhabitant
 star—old
 starac (gen. starca)—old
 man
 starica—old woman
 starinski—old-fashioned,
 antique
 stati (stanem ; pf.)—to stop,
 come to a halt
 staviti (-im ; pf.)—to put,
 place
 stavljati (-am ; ipf.)—to put,
 place
 staza—path
 stepenice (f. pl.)—stairs,
 steps
 stići (stignem ; stigao, stig-
 la ; pf.)—to arrive
 stid—shame
 stideti se (-im ; ipf.)—to be
 ashamed
 stizati (stižem ; ipf.)—to
 arrive
 sto (gen. stola ; pl. stolovi)—
 table
 sto—a hundred
 stojati (-im ; ipf.)—to stand
 stolica—chair
 strah—fear
 stranac (gen. stranca)—
 foreigner
 strani—foreign
 stranica—page
 strašan, strašna—frightful
 stric—uncle
 strpati (-am ; pf.)—to cram
 strpljiv—patient
 stube (f. pl.)—steps, stairs
 studen (f.)—bitter cold
 student—student (m.)
 studentkinja—student (f.)
 stvar (f.)—thing, matter
 subota—Saturday
 sudac (gen. suca)—judge
 suh—dry
 sunce—sun
 supa—soup
 sutra—tomorrow
 sutradan—the next day
 suv—dry
 suviše—too, too much
 svaki—each

svakako—certainly; at any
rate

sve—everything
svejedno—it doesn't matter
sv(ij)et—world; people
svi—everybody
svibanj (gen. svibnja)—May
svirati (-am; ipf.)—to play
(instrument)
svoj—one's
svojtvo—characteristic,
peculiarity
svršavati (-am; ipf.)—to
finish
svršiti (-im; pf.)—to finish
svuda—everywhere

Š

šala—jest
šapat—whisper
šećer—sugar
šešir—hat
širok—broad
šiti (šijem; ipf.)—to sew
škola—school
šofer—driver
šolja—cup
šoljica—small cup
šta—what
šteta—a pity
štogod—whatever
šuma—forest, wood
šupa—hut

T

tada—then
tačno—exactly, punctually
taj (ta, to)—that
tajna—secret
takav, takva—such a
tako—thus
taksi—taxi
taman, tamna—dark
taman—just, exactly
tamo—there
tanak, tanka—slender
tanjir—plate
tanjirić—small plate
te—and so
tečno—fluently
tek—just, exactly
tek što—just when, just after
tekući—current
telefonirati (-am; ipf. and
pf.)—to telephone
telefonski—of the telephone
teško meni!—dear me!
ti—thou, you
t(ij)esan, t(ij)esna—tight
tetka—aunt
težak, teška—heavy, difficult
tih—quiet
tko (*ije*-dialect)—who
točiti (-im; ipf.)—to pour
out (wine, etc.)
tok—course (e.g. of river)
toliko—so much, so many
topao, topla—warm

torba—bag
 tramvaj—tramcar
 trava—grass
 travanj (gen. travnja)—April
 tražiti (-im ; ipf.)—to seek,
 ask for
 trčati (-im ; ipf.)—to run
 trebati (-am ; ipf.)—to need,
 be necessary
 trenutak (gen. trenutka)—mo-
 ment, second
 tresti (tresem ; tresao, tresla ;
 ipf.)—to shake
 trošiti (-im ; ipf.)—to spend,
 waste
 trpeti (-im ; ipf.)—to endure
 tu—there
 tuđ—foreign ; someone else's
 tup—blunt
 turist—tourist
 turski—Turkish
 tužan, tužna—sad
 tužiti se (-im ; ipf.)—to com-
 plain
 tvoj—thy, thine
 tvrd—hard, firm

U

u—in, into
 ubiti (ubijem : pf.)—to kill
 učiniti (-im ; pf.)—to do
 učiniti se (-im ; pf.)—to seem
 učitelj—teacher

učiti (-im ; ipf.)—to teach,
 learn
 učtiv—polite
 ući (uđem ; ušao, ušla ; pf.)
 —to enter
 udati se (-am ; pf.)—to get
 married (of a woman)
 udobno—comfortably
 ugledan, ugledna—dis-
 tinguished, eminent
 uho—ear
 ujesti (ujedem ; ujeo, ujela ;
 pf.)—to bite
 ujutru—in the morning
 ukrasti (ukradem ; ukrao,
 ukrala ; pf.)—to steal
 ukusan, ukusna—delicious
 ulaziti (-im ; ipf.)—to enter
 ulica—street
 um(j)eti (um(ij)em ; ipf.)—
 to be able, know how
 umivati se (-am ; ipf.)—to
 wash oneself
 umoran, umorna—tired
 umr(ij)eti (-em ; umro,
 umrla)—to die
 unapr(ij)ed—beforehand
 unuče—grandson
 unutra—inside
 unutrašnjost—interior
 univerzitet—university
 upitati (-am ; pf.)—to ask
 upiti (upijem ; pf.)—to drink
 in, absorb

upoznati (-am ; pf.)—to be- come acquainted with	valjati (-am ; ipf.)—to be valid, worth
upravnik—manager, director	varoš (f.)—town
upravo—just, exactly	vaš—your, yours
uputiti (-im ; pf.)—to direct	važan, važna—important
uraditi (-im ; pf.)—to do	veče—evening
ur(ij)edenje—arrangement, organisation	večera—dinner, supper
uskočiti (-im ; pf.)—to jump in	večeras—this evening
uskoro—soon	večeravati (-am ; ipf.)—to dine
Uskrs—Easter	večerati (-am ; pf. and ipf.)— to dine
usna—lip	već—already
usp(j)eh—success	već—but, on the contrary
ustajati (-em ; ipf.)—to get up	veći—larger
ustati (ustanem ; pf.)—to get up	većina—majority
utorak (gen. utorka)—Tues- day	veliki—large
uveče—in the evening	veljača—February
uv(ij)ek—always	v(ij)enac (gen. v(ij)enca)— garland
uvid(j)eti (-im ; pf.)—to realise	v(j)erovati (v(j)erujem ; ipf.) —to believe
uvo—ear	v(j)erovatno—probably
uz—up, along	veseo, vesela—merry
uzak, uska—narrow	v(ij)est (f.)—item of news
uzeti (uzmem ; pf.)—to take	v(j)ešt—skilful
uzimati (-am ; ipf.)—to take	v(j)etar (gen. v(j)etra)—wind
uzvišen—exalted, raised	vi—you
	vid(j)eti (-im ; pf. and ipf.)— to see
	viđati (-am ; ipf.)—to see often, regularly
	vikati (vičem ; ipf.)—to shout

V

vagon-restoran—restaurant
car

vino—wine
 visok—high, tall
 više—more
 viti (vijem ; ipf.)—to wind,
 twine
 vladalac (gen. vladaoca)—
 ruler
 vo (gen. vola ; pl. volovi)—
 ox
 voće—fruit
 voda—water
 vodič—guide, leader
 vodić—guide book
 voditi (-im ; ipf.)—to lead,
 take (a person)
 vođa—leader
 vojnik—soldier
 vojska—army
 voleti (-im ; ipf.)—to like,
 love
 voz—train
 voziti (-im ; ipf.)—to drive
 vrabac (gen. vrapca)—spar-
 row
 vrag—devil
 vrata (neut. pl.)—door
 vratiti (se) (-im ; pf.)—to
 return
 vr(ij)editi (-im ; ipf.)—to be
 worth
 vr(ij)eme (gen. vremena)—
 time, weather
 vrh—peak, top
 vrlo—very

vršiti (-im ; ipf.)—to carry
 out, perform
 vrt—garden
 vruć—hot
 vrućina—heat
 vući (vučem ; vukao, vukla ;
 ipf.)—to pull, draw

Z

za—for ; after
 zaboga !—good heavens !
 zaboleti (-i ; pf.)—to begin
 to hurt
 zaboraviti (-im ; pf.)—to for-
 get
 začuti (začujem ; pf.)—to
 hear, catch a sound
 zadatak (gen. zadatka)—task
 zadovoljan, zadovoljna—con-
 tented, satisfied
 zadovoljstvo—satisfaction
 zahvalan, zahvalna—grateful
 zahvaliti (-im ; pf.)—to thank
 zahvaljivati (zahvaljujem ;
 ipf.)—to thank
 zaista—really, indeed
 zajedno—together
 zakucati (-am ; pf.)—to tap,
 knock
 zamoliti (-im ; pf.)—to pray,
 request
 zanimljiv—interesting
 zap(j)evati (-am ; pf.)—to
 begin to sing

zapitati (-am ; pf.)—to ask
 zaplakati (zaplačem ; pf.)—
 to burst into tears
 zar ne ?—isn't it so ?
 zaseban, zasebna—individual,
 for oneself
 zaspati (zaspim ; pf.)—to fall
 asleep
 zastiden—ashamed
 zašto—why
 zatim—then, after that
 zato što—because
 zatražiti (-im ; pf.)—to seek,
 ask for
 zatvoriti (-im ; pf.)—to close
 zaustaviti (-im ; pf.)—to stop,
 bring to a halt
 zaustavljati (-am ; ipf.)—to
 stop, bring to a halt
 zauzet—busy, occupied
 završiti (-im ; pf.)—to finish
 zbivati se (-a ; ipf.)—to hap-
 pen
 zbog—because of
 zbogom—goodbye
 zbuniti (-im ; ipf.)—to con-
 fuse, embarrass

zelen—green
 zemička—roll (of bread)
 zemlja—country, earth
 zgrada—building
 zid—wall
 zidati (-am ; ipf.)—to build
 zima—winter ; cold
 zimi—in the winter
 znati (-am ; ipf.)—to know
 zub—tooth
 zvanje—calling, vocation
 zvati (zovem ; ipf.)—to call

Ž

žaliti (-im ; ipf.)—to regret
 žalostan, žalosna—sad
 žao mi je—I am sorry
 žel(j)eti (-im ; ipf.)—to wish
 želja—wish
 žena—woman
 žestok—violent, fiery
 živ—alive ; lively
 živ(j)eti (-im ; ipf.)—to live
 život—life
 žuriti (se) (-im ; ipf.)—to
 hurry